This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

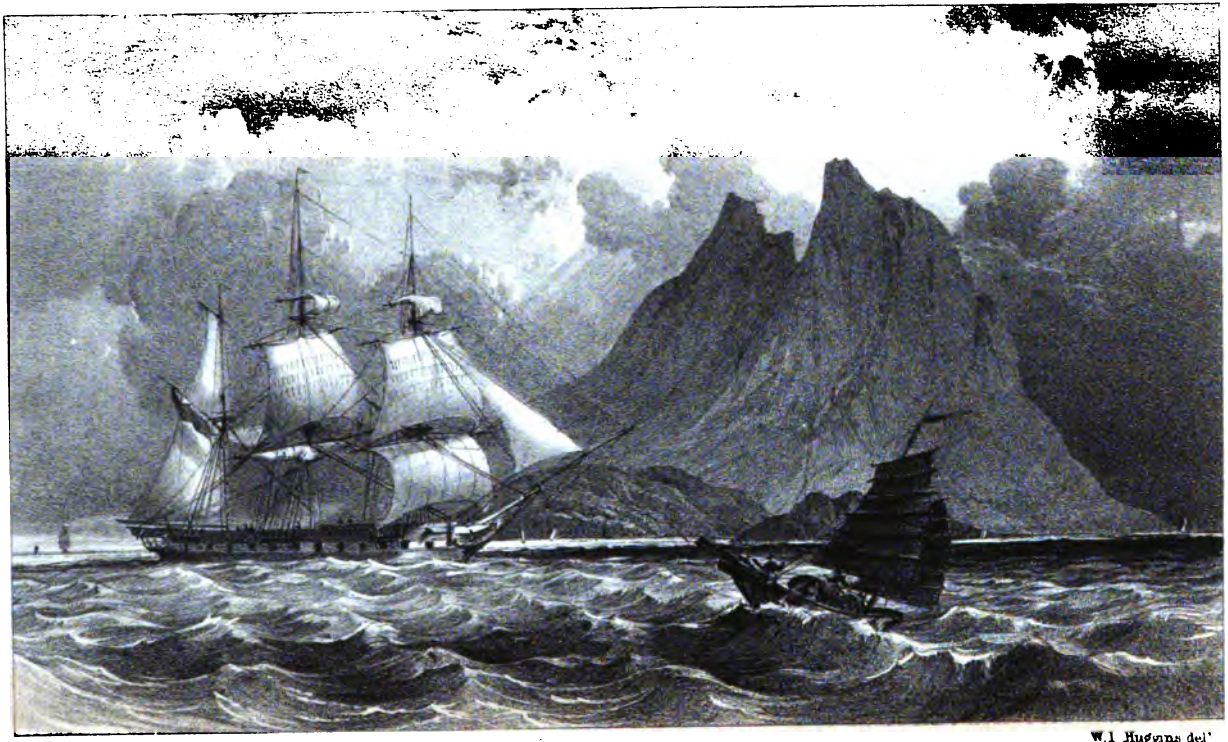
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 08242934 5

Holman
BEB



[illegible] by L. Haghe

W. I. Huggins del.

THE ENTRANCE OF THE LEMA PASSAGE FROM THE CHINA SEA.

London, Smith, Elder & Co. Cornhill

TRAVELS

IN

CHINA, NEW ZEALAND,

NEW SOUTH WALES,

VAN DIEMEN'S LAND, CAPE HORN,

ETC. ETC.

BY JAMES HOLMAN, R.N. F.R.S.

ETC. ETC.

LEAR. You see how this world goes.
GLOSTER. I see it feelingly.—SHAKSPEARE.

SECOND EDITION.

LONDON:

GEORGE ROUTLEDGE 11, RYDER'S COURT,

LEICESTER SQUARE.

1840.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
34917A
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1924 L

ADVERTISEMENT.

THIS Volume, the Fourth, which concludes the Voyage of Circumnavigation, contains the Andaman Islands—Penang—Malacca—Singapore—China—Straits of Sunda—the Cocoas—Van Diemen's Land—New South Wales—New Zealand—Cape Horn—Bahia—Flores—and return to England.

The First Volume of this Work contained Madeira—Teneriffe—St. Jago—Sierra Leone—Cape Coast—Accra—Fernando Po—Bonny—Calabar, and other Rivers in the Bight of Biafra—Prince's Island—Ascension—Rio Janeiro—and Journey to the Gold Mines.

The Second Volume contained the Brazils—The Cape Colony, and part of Caffreland—Mauritius—Madagascar, &c.

The Third Volume contained the Cormoro Islands—Zanzibar—the Seychelles—Mauritius—Ceylon—Pondicherry—Madras—Bangalore—Masulipatam—Visagapatam—and Calcutta.

LIST OF THE EMBELLISHMENTS.

Entrance of the Lema Passage from the China Sea - - - -	*Frontispiece*
Map of Canton River and the adjacent Islands	*page* 67
Chinese Opium Smokers - -	93
View of Hotun with a Duck boat -	117
H. M. Ships Imogene and Andromache forcing the passage of the Bogue - -	174
View of Lintin, with the Opium Fleet, and a Chinese smuggling boat - -	258

CONTENTS TO VOL. IV.

CHAP. I.

PAGE

Retrospect—Narrative resumed—Departure from the Sand Heads—Proceed on the Voyage to China—Drinking Health to the Dead—Andaman Islands—Penang—Visit to the Ex-Governor—Suffolk Park—Sir Edward Owen—Extraordinary rising of the Sea—Glugar estate—Nutmeg trees—Clove plantation—How cultivated—Departure from Penang—Malacca—Landing at the Town—Boarding-house—Anglo-Chinese College—Chinese Printing—Marriage—Provident care of the Emigrant Chinese—Decreasing prosperity of Malacca—Exports—Respondentia—Substitute for Glass—Departure—Boats in Chase—Singapore—Chinese Residents—Supplies from Amboyna, &c.—Coral, very offensive—Pirates—A Roland for an Oliver—A Sam-pan—The Blind—Voyage—Occupation on Ship-board—Islands on the Coast of China—Cupidity of a Boatman—Self-sufficiency of the Chinese—Compradors—The Lema Passage—Tanka Boats—Mul-pronunciation—Macao—Camoens' Cave—British Factory—Barrier Wall—An Earthquake—Removal of the Gentlemen of the Factory to Canton—Sedans—Praya Grande—Fortifications—Population of Macao—Advantageous territory, if possessed by the British—Eye Infirmary—Skilful Surgeons—Introduction of Vaccination into China—Philanthropic attentions of medical men 1

CHAP. II.

Symptoms of a Typhoon—Resistance of the Chinese to Local Improvements—Curious Petition—All objects attainable in China by Bribery—Perambulatory Barbers—Bridal Alms-begging—Divine Service in the Chinese Language—Leave Macao for Canton—Chop-boats—

PAGE

Definition of the word "Chop"—Inner and Outer Passage—Heang-Shan—Arrival at Canton—Customary reception of the Gentlemen of the Factory, by the Resident British Merchants—Suburbs of the City —Line of Hongs—Amusements on the River—Joss-house—Chinese Mode of computing Tonnage—Defect in our Maritime Laws—Bamboo Hats—A Lucky Day for the Dead—Siamese Junk—Flower-boats—Grotesque Costume for Wet Weather—Chinese Pleasure-grounds—Shops—Provisions at Canton—Method of Snaring Birds . . . 54

CHAP. III.

Engagement on the River between Mandarin Boats and Smugglers—Illegal cultivation of the Poppy—Opium Smoking—Visit to a Hong Merchant—Costume of Children—Presentation of a Petition at the City Gate—Antiquity of the Custom—Chinese Trades—Firmness of the Committee at the British Factory—Preparations for Resistance—Chinese Bombast—The Menace evaporates in Smoke—Excursion to Whampoa—French Island—The Hoppo's Visit of Measurement—Venality of the Custom House Officers—General Cupidity of the Chinese—Duck Boats—A Specimen of the Insolence of the Chinese Government—Return to Canton—Fire in the City—Country Ships—Fah-tee Gardens—English Jargon—Proffer of Pacification—Chow-chow-chop—Sea-stock—Hong Merchants and Hoppo—Chinese Monastery and Temple—Boat-racing—Company's Ships passing the Bogue—Chinese Dinner—Boatwomen—Canton Market—Specie—Airy Barbers and Quack Doctors—Chinese Test of Innocence—Remarkable Instance of Politeness in a Mandarin—Leave Canton—Sail from Whampoa in the Ernaad for Lintin—Opium Ships and Opium Smuggling—Leave Lintin for Macao—Lord Napier's arrival in Canton —Battle of the Bogue—Lord Napier's return to Macao—Emperor's Edict 89

CHAP. IV.

Manners and Customs—Festivals and their Abuses—Distinctions conferred by the Emperor—Modes of Salutation—Honours and Rewards paid to the Aged—Characteristics of Happiness and Misery—Rules of Regimen—Popular Superstitions—Vaccination—Badges of Civil and Military Ranks—A Dexterous Rogue—Raffles and Lotteries—Installation of the Hoppo—Constant Followers—Canton Bankers—Chinese Coin—Mountaineeer Tribes 178

PAGE

CHAP. V.

Immoral Character of the Chinese—Prevalence of Corruption—Social Ties—Chinese Ethics—Wives and Concubines—Grounds of Divorce—Education—Gambling—Pugilistic Code—Suicide—Criminal Law—Hypocrisy and Venality of the Authorities—Extensive and Ingenious System of Plunder, by land and water—Kidnapping—Laws and Edicts—Despotism of the Magistracy—Prisons 205

CHAP. VI.

Fine Arts—Printing—The Drama—Jealousy of the Chinese—Port and Measurement Duties—Sources of the Revenue—Expenditure—Production and Manufacture of Silk—Emigration—Trades' Unions—Opium—Tea—Restrictions on Foreigners—Slavery—Blind Mendicants—Charitable Institutions—Foreigners Travelling in China . . 242

CHAP. VII.

Religion—Language 275

CHAP. VIII.

Outlines of Chinese History 297

CHAP. IX.

Outlines of Chinese History—continued 23

CHAP. X.

Outlines of Chinese History—concluded 343

CHAP. XI.

Departure from Macao—Passage through the Straits of Banca and Sunda—Malay Pirates—The Ship Guilford—Enter the Indian Ocean—Description of the Cocoas or Keeling's Islands—Ennui on Ship-board—Swan River an Estuary—Conflicting opinions of the capabilities of the Settlement—Arrival at Van Diemen's Land . . . 365

PAGE

CHAP. XII.

Author disembarks at Hobart Town — Female Factory and Orphan School — "Solomon's Temple" — Convict Labour — Macquarie Harbour — Risden Farm—Recollections of the early Settlers—Natives and Europeans—Visit the Jail—First Races at Hobart Town—New Wharf—The Battery—Epidemic and its causes—Leave Hobart Town for the Interior—Saltpan Plains, the residence of Mr. Kermode—Ross Bridge—Campbell Town—Wanstead Park—Captain Wood's Farm—South Esk Ferry—Launceston—Mymosa Bark—Public Jail—Visit to George Town—Anecdote of Native Ferocity—Mr. Walsh, Port Captain—Cataract of the South Esk—Supply of Water—Mr. Lawrence—Departure from Launceston—Van Diemen's Land Horse Company's Establishment — Pensanger — Improvident Speculations — A Yorkshire Farmer—Mona Vale—Return to Hobart Town—Author Embarks for Sydney 394

CHAP. XIII.

Departure from Van Diemen's Land—Bass's Straits—Melancholy Fate of the Discoverer—Arrival at New South Wales—Author's Reasons for abridging his MSS.—Excursion in the Interior to the Northward—First Steam-Packet on the Hunter—Journey to the Southward—Morrumbidgee—Argyle—Goulburn Plains—Journey to Bathurst, and back to Sydney—Author joins a party of Exploration, to find a road from Narriga to Jervis Bay—Adventures and Observations by the way—Disappointment of the Expectations of the Party—Botany Bay—La Perouse's Monument—Tomb of a French Priest—Inscription on a Gum-tree—Tablet to Cook the Navigator—Culpable Indifference of the Colonists—Soil of New South Wales—Aborigines—Colonization . 442

CHAP. XIV.

Departure for England—New Zealand—Description of the Island—Habits of the Natives—Passing the Meridian—Frolics of a Whale—Ice-Islands—Doubling Cape Horn—Bahia—Dr. and Mrs. Dundas—Flores—A Party visit the Island—Ship disappears—Consternation and Disappointment occasioned thereby — Re-appearance of the Ship—Party embark—A brief account of the Inhabitants of Flores and Corvo—Author's pecuniary arrangements—Arrival in England—L'Envoi . 486

TRAVELS,

&c. &c.

CHAPTER I.

Retrospect—Narrative resumed—Departure from the Sand Heads—Proceed on the Voyage to China—Drinking Health to the Dead—Andaman Islands—Penang—Visit to the Ex-Governor—Suffolk Park—Sir Edward Owen—Extraordinary rising of the Sea—Glugar estate—Nutmeg trees—Clove plantation—How cultivated—Departure from Penang—Malacca—Landing at the Town—Boarding-house—Anglo-Chinese College—Chinese Printing—Marriage—Provident care of the Emigrant Chinese—Decreasing prosperity of Malacca—Exports—Respondentia—Substitute for Glass—Departure—Boats in Chase—Singapore—Chinese Residents—Supplies from Amboyna, &c.—Coral, very offensive—Pirates—A Roland for an Oliver—A Sam-pan—The Blind—Voyage—Occupation on Ship-board—Islands on the Coast of China—Cupidity of a Boatman—Self-sufficiency of the Chinese—Compradors—The Lema Passage—Tanka Boats—Mal-pronunciation—Macao—Camoens' Cave—British Factory—Barrier Wall—An Earthquake—Removal of the Gentlemen of the Factory to Canton—Sedans—Praya Grande—Fortifications—Population of Macao—Advantageous territory, if possessed by the British—Eye Infirmary—Skilful Surgeons—Introduction of Vaccination into China—Philanthropic attentions of medical men.

I APPROACH the close of my labours with the feelings of a traveller who, after a long absence, finds himself at last returning home. I reach the point of repose with pleasure, not unmixed with re-

gret, and hear gathering round me familiar voices burthened with words of welcome and congratulation. The prospect of concluding satisfactorily an undertaking of some magnitude is a source of pure gratification, not only as it relates to the accomplishment of a stipulated task, but to the hope that the mind, relieved from its present employment, may discover, hereafter, even still more pleasurable channels of occupation. The tranquillity of the traveller's rest, when, the perils and anxieties of his varied course over, he remains in seclusion to brood on the past, and, perhaps, to meditate new adventures for the future, is not altogether a life of idleness and dreams. He cannot be quite at ease. A thousand memories crowd upon him, he lives again over many scenes that come back to him filled with fruitless desires or impatient hope; he again treads the shore of a remote land, and feels the breath of an unaccustomed climate; he again explores with an avidity that knows no sense of fatigue, the forests and the cities, the sequestered haunts of uncivilized man, or the busy and crowded places where commerce draws together a motley assemblage from the equator to the poles; he hears the sounds of an unknown language again for the first time, and struggles through a cloud of novelties with the energy of one who is resolved to succeed; he thinks in vain of hours that had been wasted upon unprofitable speculations, and of how much more wisely such and such opportunities might have been used; he decides with the de-

cision of experience, and laments the inadequacy of that enthusiasm which, born of the occasion, is but too apt to miscalculate its means, and to anticipate impossible triumphs over space and time. From these contemplations he is naturally led into more responsible and active theories. He believes, that, with his knowledge thus enlarged, and his judgment thus instructed, he could go forth to new scenes better prepared to penetrate and understand them: that his next enterprise would be more profitable than all the rest: that, being enabled by the results of his former wanderings, to compare the characters of different nations, and to trace the features of resemblance and of contrast in their customs and manners, he could achieve more practical good than he had hitherto attained; and he indulges in the sanguine, but natural, prophecy, that there yet remains for him a wider field, and a more glorious work, than had ever before been presented to him. It is a part of the constitution of a traveller to look back with unsettled feelings, and to yearn for the time to come, which he believes to contain the great purpose of his life.

I can hardly, however, take to myself this agreeable flattery of the imagination. I have traversed so many lands, and ploughed so many seas, that, although I have recorded my travels with a pen that failed to render justice to my own conceptions, I hardly know, were I once more to venture upon the waters, to what point of the compass I should

direct my course. In this volume I conclude a voyage of circumnavigation. It would be an affectation I trust inconsistent with my nature, were I not to acknowledge that the favour with which my undertaking has been received diminishes much of my consciousness of its unworthiness. The peculiar circumstances in which I was placed, the novelty and hazards of my situation, and the pursuit of knowledge under difficulties such as, I believe, were never experienced by any previous traveller, have helped to propitiate the criticisms of the public, and to acquire for me, in the first instance, that kindness of construction which, I am aware, was essential to the right understanding of my labours. Had I been tried by the ordinary canons my book would probably have been set aside. It is because the important inlet upon which my predecessors have chiefly relied in the formation of their opinions is closed upon me that I derive any especial claim upon the indulgence of my readers. Could I have seen where I have only felt—could I have witnessed what I have only heard—could I have watched the features and the actions and the trifling details that make up the sum of character, and through which human motives are as visible as if they were revealed in words, instead of being obliged to trust to oral acquisition, to the sound of the voice, and the subtle transitions of its varying tones, my work would have been of a very different kind. But I have been obliged to condense and refine my speculations—to

judge by inference and comparison—to extract, by a tedious and severe process, the essence of watchful observation—and to rely upon accumulated testimonies for that information which others obtain at a single glance. But perhaps what I have lost in vividness I may have atoned for in accuracy. I believe that the very necessity of thinking seriously and adopting facts with caution may not have been unproductive of benefits of another kind. If I cannot make panoramas to amuse and gratify, I hope I have been enabled to gather some solid statements that are not destitute of instruction. This is all I could have aimed at—and, if I have failed, the fault is not in the want of an abiding zeal, and the love of truth.

That I felt acutely the deprivation under which I laboured, must be evident from many passages, where I have been compelled to trust to the accounts of others, and where I have been obliged to treat slightly of some features of interest that I would have willingly expanded if I could. The luxurious atmosphere of the East, tinting the clouds and the trees with its own delicious hues—romantic defiles and lofty mountains—the surging lake and the virgin river, over which a vessel never yet sailed—the gloomy forest and the arid desert—these magnificent sights do not make pages of pictures in my work. The picturesque—which awakens in me emotions as deep as if I saw it spread before me—I have not trusted myself to describe. I feared that

my feelings would be misunderstood, and that while I merely related that which I felt, I might be accused of attempting to delineate that which I could not possibly comprehend. Yet, on the summit of the precipice, and in the heart of the green woods, emotions as palpable and as true have agitated me as if with the blessings of sight I could survey the whole of the wondrous scenery by which I was surrounded. There was an intelligence in the winds of the hills, and in the solemn stillness of the buried foliage, that could not be mistaken. It entered into my heart, and I could have wept, not that I did not see, but that I could not pourtray all that I felt. This is the mysterious compensation of Providence, which, in depriving us of one source of delight, appears to render more sensitive and perceptible all the other means of intellectual enjoyment. Perhaps a time may come when I shall be enabled to resolve the history of these inward associations into a more definite and tangible shape.

I know not how far my exertions to deserve the favour with which these travels have hitherto been received may have succeeded, but I believe that the subject of this volume will be found to exceed in interest and in value that of its predecessors. It traces a scene less known, and more curious. It cost me more labour of a philosophical nature: I had more difficult enquiries to make, and less familiar objects to deal with. If I have thrown a single ray of light, where light had not fallen before, I shall be

satisfied. In proportion as the embarrassments of my local position increased, and the obstacles appeared to thicken, my energies invariably rose with the occasion. Indeed, this seems to be the quality of my mind to which I may refer whatever purposes of my life I may be said to have accomplished. I can endure any certainty better than suspense, and as my situation always exposed me to a great degree of suspense in the acquisition of information, I was impelled forward with commensurate activity until I reached the desired point. To this resolution to succeed, strengthened by the cheerfulness that has never deserted me even on the most trying occasions, I am indebted for whatever I have done. The sense of past success renders me, perhaps, more anxious that I should terminate my undertaking in a spirit at least equal to that which has marked its progress in the estimation of those who have judged indulgently of its merits. I have some reasonable hope that my last volume will not do discredit to those that have preceded it: and in this hope, trustfully but not presumptuously entertained, I resume my narrative "by flood and field."

Monday, August 9, 1830.—At one this morning, having the tide in our favour, with the wind w.s.w., we got under weigh, and at six, being well clear of the shoals, called the Sand Heads, the pilots left us to return to their own vessels, when they soon parted company, leaving us to contend against a strong s.w. monsoon (which always produces a

heavy sea), and find our way down the Bay of Bengal as well as we could. In the evening the General Harris was so near us on our lee quarter, that we were afraid of falling on board of her: this was highly reprehensible on the part of the officer on watch in that ship, whose Commander was the junior officer, and whose vessel being to leeward prevented the possibility of our keeping away, and rendered it a still more imperative duty for them to keep a proper distance, especially as the night was dark, the sea running high, and the weather very squally.

Thursday, 12.—We this morning experienced a favourable change in the weather, but we had neither land nor vessel in sight, and the wind continued in the old quarter, veering from S.W. to W. The ship's company had extra grog to-day to drink the health of George the Fourth, who we were not aware had been at that time two months deceased. The sailors amused themselves with dancing, singing, and acting, in the evening, and they gave some ludicrous, and not bad representations of the "Old Commodore," and Gentlemen of the Law.

Friday, 13.—A little before daylight we saw the small uninhabited island of Pressurin, and at nine we were abreast of it, bearing south, about two miles distant.

Monday, 16.—This forenoon we saw a group of islands bearing from E. by N. to N.E. ½ E. supposed to be the small islands surrounding Junk-Ceylon,

a high barren island, celebrated only for the quantity and quality of the tin that is exported from it. The ore is extracted and prepared principally by Chinese. During the night we passed the Andamans, but not near enough to be seen even, had it been daylight, and this afternoon we were abreast of the Nicobar islands.

Great and Little Andaman are the most northerly of a group of Islands, or Archipelago, extending nearly in a southerly direction from Cape Negrais, in the Bay of Bengal, towards Achein Head, on the north coast of Sumatra; the southernmost of the islands included in this line are called the Nicobars. At Great Andaman there are two spacious harbours on the east side of the island, each capable of containing a large fleet, well land-locked, with good anchorage from five to twenty fathoms, and there is excellent fresh water in many places. These bays abound with a great variety of fish, and among them is some of the finest that are to be met with on any part of the coasts of India, namely, pomfrets, soles, rock-fish, mullet, &c., also cray-fish, prawns, shrimps, and oysters. A number of persons were sent from Bengal in 1791 to found a settlement on the island, at Port Chatham, situated on the east side near the south end, which colony was removed in 1793 to another part of the coast, also on the east side, about five leagues from the northern extremity, which was named Port Cornwallis, after the Admiral; who recommended the

change, from wishing to make it a naval station; however, the impenetrable forests with which the island was covered, consisting generally of coarse pooné and red wood, made the task of clearing and cultivating the ground very laborious, and the continual rain during the S.W. monsoon, rendered the place so unhealthy that after a few years perseverance, it was thought advisable to withdraw the colony.

The present inhabitants of these islands resemble the ordinary African Negroes; their complexion is a jet black, their hair woolly, and their stature low; the females have all the peculiarities that distinguish the Hottentot women, they go perfectly naked, without the least idea of shame, but they do not appear on that account to be without their full share of personal vanity, for they daub themselves with grease, mixed up with red clay, by way of ornament; this filthy practice is not however without its use, as it serves them as a protection against the attacks of the ants, and other insects.

These people have no fixed habitation, but they usually live near the coast, prowling from rock to rock along the shore, in quest of shell and other fish; and these last they catch very dexterously with a wooden spear. As they are chiefly dependant upon the ocean for subsistence, they are so scantily supplied in tempestuous weather, that many fall a sacrifice to hunger and cold.

There is no certain account to be gained as to

the manner in which these islands first became inhabited; but, it is conjectured, that they were populated by two Portuguese slave-ships, known to have been wrecked on Great Andaman many years ago.

Very few of the natives were ever known to hold communication with the colonists, and those few were taken prisoners in Old Harbour, where Admiral Cornwallis, in H. M. S. Minerva, landed his water-casks on a small island, whither these natives came in the night to steal the iron-hoops. They were discovered from the ship at the dawn of day, when the boats were sent on shore, with a party of marines, to capture them. This they accomplished, but not without the loss of life, as several natives were killed, and many wounded. Report stated that these people were cannibals, but this supposition merely arose from their eating raw salted meats, &c. and may fairly be questioned.

From the signs which they use, and their congregational morning songs of praise, both which are thought to be derived from the Portuguese, they appear to have some notion of a Supreme Being, whom they worship after their imperfect manner; but their ideas on religion are extremely confused and indistinct.

Two or three children had, at different times, been surprised by the colonists, but only one was ever known to become reconciled to the civilized customs of Europeans. He was a youth who grew up to manhood in the service of Admiral Rainer, in

whose family he passed his life. A party of colonists, upon a fishing excursion, one day found a young girl about fourteen years of age, in a starving condition; she was brought to the settlement, where her wants were relieved by Lieutenant, now Sir Thomas Ramsay, but it was difficult to induce her to wear clothing; and after having been nourished, and taken care of for several weeks, she ran away into the woods, and was never more heard of.

Tuesday, 17.—We had squally weather, and the wind veered from N.W. to S.W. At daylight saw the land, which proved to be Pulo Bouton, and the surrounding groups of small islands; also a number of islands along the coast of Quida; Ladder Island bearing N. and Penang, or Prince of Wales' Island, S.E. by E. distant 40 miles.

Wednesday, 18.—We approached Penang but slowly, as the wind was light and against us. Exchanged signals with the H. C. S. London, Captain Smith, from Madras. At half-past five, the Purser and Surgeon left the ship, in a native boat, to go on shore; and, at six, we came to an anchor about five miles from the town, and near the H. C. S. London, when her Purser, Mr. Lenox, came on board to see his old friends.

The well-known boatman, Abraham Brown, came off to the ship with fruit, &c. for sale, and with offers of personal services to the officers and passengers. He also brought with him a few mangosteins. This

highly-esteemed fruit is commonly about six inches in circumference, of a very agreeable subacid, with an exquisitely delicate, yet delicious flavour. It is peculiar to the southernmost part of the Peninsula of Asia, and the adjacent islands. I learn it has not been yet found to succeed in either of the Presidencies. The tree which bears this fruit is very similar to the mango, yet its produce has not the least resemblance, either in size, taste, or flavour.

Thursday, 19.—We got under weigh immediately after breakfast, for the purpose of getting nearer to the town, but the wind was so light that we did not reach our new anchorage till near noon. Mr. Astell and myself went on shore with Capt. Timins. There is a pier at this place, and also a good beach, with very little surf, so that the landing, at either one or the other, can be effected very easily. Palanquin carriages, capable of holding two persons, each drawn by one horse, were in attendance, and we set out immediately to wait upon the Ex-Governor, Mr. Fullerton, who resided at Suffolk Park, three miles from the town. The Government-house was at a much greater distance, situated near the top of a high hill, about eight miles from the town, at that time occupied by Lord Dalhousie, who had just arrived from Calcutta, in a very bad state of health.

Mr. Fullerton had had the misfortune to endure two severe and calamitous losses in one day, viz.,

his wife and his government. This unprecedented ill-luck had happened on the 30th June previously, and the time had been too short to mellow his affliction; we therefore found him suffering from very great depression of spirits, and his reception of our party was by no means gracious. This was not exactly just upon his part, for as Captain Timins had been known to him some time, and had at other times been compelled, as a mere matter of etiquette, to pay him the duty of a visit, he was anxious to shew him a mark of respect under adverse circumstances, and had engaged us to participate in the well-meant compliment; he went also to offer what he deemed an acceptable present, consisting of a packet of English newspapers; we ought therefore to have been received at least with courtesy, for however we may suffer under personal affliction we should be careful not to wound the feelings of others, by slighting well intentioned kindness. We should ever bear in mind the maxim of the elegant Chesterfield, who said wisely in speaking of manner, that "some persons will cause more dissatisfaction by granting a request, than others by refusing it."

Mr. Ibbotson had been appointed Superintendent of the three stations in the straits of Malacca, (that is, Penang, Malacca, and Singapore,) but as the residence of the Chief Authority had at the same time been transferred from Penang to Singapore, Mr. Ibbotson was requested to reside there, with an assistant under his immediate direction, at each of the other places.

From Suffolk Park we proceeded to the Admiralty House, to pay our respects to Sir Edward Owen, to whom I had the honour of being known, and whose brother, Captain Owen of the Eden, was one of my kindest as well as most intelligent friends. I was much gratified by having the good fortune to meet the Admiral upon his own station, where he was Commander-in-Chief. I had the additional pleasure of being introduced to Lady Owen, and of renewing my acquaintance with Sir Edward's niece, Miss Cannon. The Admiral kindly offered Mr. Astell and myself accommodation under his own roof, and we therefore passed the short period of our stay at Penang very agreeably.

The mornings and evenings are the only portions of the day when exercise can be taken with advantage in this climate, and at these times we made our various excursions. There is an Inn at Penang, but it is of so inferior a kind that it is seldom occupied, excepting by officers of ships which touch here. Invalids who come hither for the benefit of their health commonly take up their abode with a friend, or else hire a house for their own use.

Friday, 20.—We had much rain during the night, and forenoon. The tide rose to-day two feet higher than it had ever before been known to do. Various causes had concurred to produce this effect, therefore the phenomenon was tolerably satisfactorily accounted for: first, the wind had been blowing hard from the westward, in the Bay of Bengal, for

several days before; secondly, the spring tides were at their height; and thirdly, there had been an eclipse of the sun and moon two days previously. Much damage was done to the native habitations erected near the shore.

Saturday, 21.—Soon after daylight Mr. Astell and myself left the Admiral's house in a palanquin carriage to visit Mr. Brown, at his estate called Glugar, which lay about four miles distant. This Gentleman, on our arrival, proposed that we should ascend the hill to view the surrounding country, and he provided us with ponies for the occasion, the road being too steep and fatiguing for a walk. From the summit of the hill there was a most commanding and picturesque view, equal to any that could be seen from the highest part of the island. After returning from our ride, we examined the nutmegs in all their respective stages, and Mr. Brown obligingly pressed us to take as many specimens of each as we thought proper.

Mr. Brown has a most excellent dwelling-house, surrounded by about 1000 acres of land, 400 of which was laid out as a spice plantation, partly nutmeg, and partly clove trees; the produce of the former is from 10,000 to 15,000 per day, and on one occasion 24,000 was collected, yet it is not considered to have arrived at its highest state of perfection, as most of the trees are young, and many are not yet of an age to fructify.

At Bencoolen, for example, the nutmeg trees have

been known to continue bearing for forty years, during which time the produce has every year been greater than the preceding, and up to the expiration of the above mentioned time, the trees have continued in a most flourishing condition: it is also remarkable that this tree continues to bear at all seasons, the fruit is gathered singly as they ripen, or fall, the proof of their being fit to pluck is their bursting the outer shell, and discovering the beautiful scarlet colour of the mace which covers the nut; the outer shell contains a pulp, which if boiled down makes a pleasant jelly strongly flavoured. When the mace is removed, the nutmeg still remains within a shell about the thickness of a hazel nut, and almost equally hard.

The father of Mr. Brown was the first person who introduced the spice tree into this Island, and he had so much confidence in the result that he risked his fortune in the speculation; his spirit of enterprise is deserving of commendation, as few people would have been willing like him to lay out a great sum of money without the remotest chance of repayment for several years. The trees are six years old before they begin to bear well, at seven they double their former crop, and at eight they quadruple it.

The expenses of labour on the estate of Glugar are very considerable, but by manuring once a year, round the extremities of the lateral branches of the oots, which run near the surface of the ground, the

produce is so much increased that the trees are in a continuous state of fructification. The nutmegs are selected for different markets according to their qualities, the best being sent to England, the second quality to Bengal, and the inferior sort to China.

The Clove Tree grows very luxuriantly, and bears well; but it is not so profitable as the nutmeg tree. A part of the production of the clove tree is called the mother clove, which is the part from which the spice grows; it forms a separate article of trade, and is chiefly used in medicine, or by the Chinese for embalming their dead.

About noon we took leave of Mr. Brown, whose estate begins now to yield very substantial returns for the original outlay expended upon it. This gentleman is also the proprietor of several other estates in the Island, as well as of some valuable property in houses. He is consequently a person of very considerable influence, and enjoys the additional advantage of being highly respected by all who know him.

About three o'clock Mr. Astell and myself took our departure from the house of Sir Edward Owen, to return on board the Reliance, which we did, commenting gratefully on the gratifying attentions we had received from the Admiral and his lady, and also from her ladyship's brother, Lieutenant Hay, an officer attached to the Admiral's flag.

The Admiral's ship had been sent into the straits

of Malacca, to act against the piratical vessels with which those seas are infested, and as many complaints had been made of their daring attacks upon the merchant vessels, passing through the straits, this protection had been lately sent to their aid. The Admiral's flag was therefore, at the time of our visit, hoisted in his boat before his house.

The Malays, who generally profess the Mohammedan religion, are fond of change of place, and daring enterprises, with the view of supplying them with the means for indulging in all the sensual gratifications that their passions and habits of life dictate. They are well known to be the most treacherous, blood thirsty, and revengeful people on earth; they fight desperately, and have no idea either of giving or receiving quarter, so that when you overpower them and spare their lives, they only imagine you are reserving them for an ignominious death, consequently when they are boarded by men-of-war's boats, and find resistance vain, they endeavour to secrete themselves; yet still they persevere in the display of their revengeful disposition by watching an opportunity of killing or wounding their conquerors, until they are finally disarmed and secured; even then they do not thank you for sparing their lives, but display a sullenness of disposition that implies the contempt they feel for the lenity you have shewn them.

On reaching the wharf we found the purser on the point of going off in a boat deeply laden with sand, but as we were not disposed to risk our lives

needlessly by going in an overloaded boat, we hired one for ourselves, and when we arrived on board we had the mortification to learn that the wind would not admit of the ship's sailing that evening, Mr. Spawforth, therefore, returned to the shore, to pay another visit to Mr. Brown at Glugar. Soon after he got there, a report was brought that a China-man had been murdered on the road about a mile from the house. The poor fellow proved to be a pedlar who had been waylaid by a party of Malays, for the sake of the trifling property which he was hawking about. Messrs. Brown and Spawforth went to the spot where the body lay covered with boughs of trees, he had been stabbed with a cresse, which had entered just below the nipple of the left breast.

We learnt that murders had lately been of frequent occurrence, and that during the preceding month, no less than four had been committed. A great reduction had taken place in the police a short time before, which was complained of as a serious evil, and its inefficiency also much complained of where the population was composed of a variety of nations, viz., Europeans, Malays, Chinese, Bengalese, Malabars, &c.

"Pulo Penang,* or Prince of Wales Island, is situated off the west coast of the Malay peninsula. Its N. E. point is in lat. 5°. 25′. N.—long. 100°. 19′. E. It is computed to contain nearly 160 square miles.

* Betel Nut Island (from its shape).

The harbour is capacious and affords good anchorage. Throughout the centre of the island there is a range of lofty hills, the highest of which is on the western side, 2574 feet above the level of the sea. In 1785, the island was granted to Francis Light, captain of a country ship, by the King of Queda, as a marriage portion with his daughter. Captain Light transferred it to the Honourable East India Company, and was by them appointed Governor of the island. The Bengal Government, seeing the island so peculiarly adapted as a mercantile station for vessels from all the Malay ports, the Malaccas, Borneo, Celebes, and the Philippine Islands, did not fail to recommend an establishment being placed there, whereby their trade would be connected with that of China, and from the conduct of the Dutch, it became necessary to have a port where the country ships might meet with the eastern merchants, not only for the promotion of that valuable commerce, but to afford a windward station of refreshment and repair to the King's, the Company's, and the country ships."—*Horsburg.*

From the appearance of the interior, and the number of tombs that were discovered there, soon after the colony was formed, the tradition of its having been formerly inhabited, seems entitled to credit; when taken possession of, however, there were only a few miserable fishermen on the sea-coast. The population of Penang, at the close of 1833, was said to be 40,322.

The island of Penang is about three miles distant from the main land, and forms a strait of a moderate length, in almost every part of which vessels may safely anchor, but ships of a great draught of water, generally enter at the north end, by which opening they also leave it, from there being a bar at the south end, formed of a knoll of hard sand, on which there is only a depth of 15 feet at low water. A survey of this part of the strait was made by the late Sir Home Popham, when he was a Lieutenant in the Navy, and had the command of a large merchantman.

Sunday, 22.—From the unsettled state of the weather, we did not get under weigh till 3 P. M.; and, after clearing the shipping, we were still detained a short time, waiting for our boat, which had been sent on shore to bury a seaman, who had died that morning.

At sunset the atmosphere assumed a very threatening aspect, and it was not long before we were visited with a most tremendous squall, accompanied with torrents of rain. As the wind was against us, and we were only in 5½ fathoms water, the captain was induced to anchor for the night.

Monday, 23.—The wind proving fair, at daylight we were able to proceed on our voyage. At noon, we were abreast of the west side of the island of Penang; while, on the following day, we got sight of the high land of Sumatra.

Wednesday, 25.—The wind had been very light

the preceding 24 hours, but soon after midnight it freshened fast,

"And all around us one dark sky,"

a symptom well known to mariners who are accustomed to navigate the straits of Malacca, as indicating a heavy description of squall, called here a Sumatra, because that island lies in the direction from whence these threatening appearances arise. At halfpast one in the morning, the storm burst upon us with its utmost violence; and had we not been prepared for its approach, the consequences must have been very serious. With all our care the ship was nearly on her beam ends, and three of her sails were split in the brails.

Bursts as a wave, that from the cloud impends,
And swell'd with tempests on the ship descends;
White are the decks with foam; the winds aloud
Howl o'er the masts, and sing through every shroud.—
Pope's Homer.

Monday, 30.—The three preceding days we had nothing but light and contrary winds, and anchoring every night, made but little progress; however, having arrived within a few miles of Malacca roads this forenoon, Captain Timins sent one of the boats, under charge of Mr. Loveridge, to the town of Malacca, in which Messrs. Spawforth, Astell, and myself, went on shore; and, as it was high water, we were enabled to go up the river to the proper landing-place at the town; had it been low water, we should have been compelled to get out of the boat

a considerable distance from the beach, to be carried on shore on men's shoulders over a mud flat.

On reaching the town, we were conducted to a boarding-house, kept by the widow of a Lieutenant in the Dutch navy. This house is well known to all the officers of the H. C. ships, who commend its cleanliness and quiet, and who think the accommodations quite of a superior order, considering the place.

There is one inn in the town, but it is neither so comfortable nor so respectable as the boarding-house. We passed great part of the evening in walking about the town, which is not large, but it is clean, and the streets are good. A great number of Chinese reside at Malacca, and we heard several of them playing upon an instrument peculiar to their country, accompanied by their voices; but we did not esteem either the one or the other to be very harmonious.

Tuesday, 31.—The whole household was disturbed in the middle of the night, by the frightful noise of a hen, who was defending her chickens from the attacks of a rat.

We all rose at daylight, and I accompanied Mr. Astell in a drive round the town, and a short distance into the country, before breakfast. In the forenoon we visited the Anglo-Chinese College, which was at that time under the direction of the Rev. Mr. Kydd. There are twenty-two boys admitted on the establishment, who are educated at the expense of the Society; and there were also seven supernumeraries, who derive the benefit of in-

struction, as well as the use of the books of the College, but who do not reside in it, or derive from it any other advantage. All the students are the sons of Chinese residents at Malacca, many of whom, as well as their fathers, were born in the place, and have never been out of it.

The great objects of the Anglo-Chinese College, as avowed in the published plan of the institution, is the reciprocal cultivation of Chinese and European literature: to render, on the one hand, the Chinese language and literature accessible to Europeans; and, on the other, the English language and European literature and science accessible to the Ultra-Ganges nations. The Malay language, and the Ultra-Ganges literature, are included in this general definition. Connected, of course, with these specific purposes, is the diffusion of the tenets of the Christian faith, to which end the College has contributed very largely and usefully. It may not be uninteresting to state, shortly, the course of study adopted in the College. Its students are divided into four classes. The first class are occupied with the elements of mental philosophy, astronomy, geography, and the use of the globes. The second class, are employed upon the study of their own language; the elementary parts of both languages, arithmetic, and incipient lessons in geography.—The third class, study the languages, writing, arithmetic, and translation: and the fourth class, principally Chinese, with the mere elements of English. There is much matter committed to memory in the

course of these studies; and although no person can more cordially approve of the principles and the objects of this excellent institution, I confess that I should like to see some infusion into its system of those improvements, which of late years have so much advanced the cause of education, by diminishing its difficulties. The Anglo-Chinese College would accomplish wider benefits if it laid less stress upon the memory, and more upon the understanding of the pupils. I merely address myself in general terms to this controverted point, conscious that any suggestion calculated to assist so admirable a design, will be received in the spirit in which it is proffered.

The first Chinese who settled here married Malay women, those who came after them either followed their example or married their offspring by the first settlers, in preference to bringing over their own countrywomen—and, it is said, that the Malay women greatly prefer the Chinese, because they make better husbands, and are more industrious and prudent than their own countrymen.

Mr. Kydd employed three Chinamen to cut the characters of their own language out of hard wood, from which they now print.

Since my visit to Malacca I find that the Rev. Samuel Dyer has been employed at Penang in superintending the construction of metallic moveable types for Chinese characters, and that in October, 1833, nearly two hundred varieties had been cut. These have superseded an equal number

of wood; and it is found that besides the great advantage in durability, the process of printing was greatly facilitated, which will economise both time and funds, and thereby prove the means of enabling the Missionaries to distribute a far greater number of books and tracts.

It will be seen from Mr. Dyer's account, that he intends prosecuting the work until he has established a font of between 3,000 and 4,000 characters, which he states will be sufficient for all missionary purposes, but he observes "even a variety of 1200 might be fairly said to constitute the mass of type required on most occasions," and concludes by saying, that "the progress in this laudable undertaking will now depend on the means that are afforded him, which arises from voluntary subscription;" and as the sum required is not any very great amount, it is to be hoped that every well-wisher to the propagation of the Gospel in China will lend their aid in support of this work. The average cost of each character is estimated to be 70½ cents, (less than 3*s*. sterling.) Now if a subscription was set on foot, the amount might be speedily raised in the three capitals of the United Kingdom. I will here beg leave to remark, that if the friends to the propagation of the Gospel, among the Chinese and the Eastern nations, were acquainted with the important advantages that have been derived from the Anglo-Chinese College at Malacca, it would receive much greater support than it has hitherto experienced.

The Director informed me that the boys educated at this College, easily procured employment as clerks, or interpreters, to Chinese or other merchants in various parts of the Eastern world.*

The Chinese merchants, mechanics, and labourers, who have from time to time gone to reside in any of the Eastern islands, have generally made it a practice to marry females belonging to their adopted country—there are, however, some exceptions to this rule, as a few merely remain to realise a fortune, with which they return to settle in their native land—others, again, migrate to and fro, as it suits their convenience or interest, in a manner similar to that practised by the Kroomen, on the coast of Africa.

The following extract from the letter of a Chinese Emigrant in the Straits of Malacca, will serve to throw some light upon the Chinese emigrants in these Straits, and the Eastern Archipelago.

"Secret Societies have risen up in all the Settlements. They are all emanations of the Triad Society. They have secret signs and dark phrases —a circumstance that identifies them with all that odious fraternity. Of late there has arisen a very large stock of this Society, consisting of a great many men, extremely powerful and violent. They

* The son of the late Dr. Morrison, was instructed in the Chinese language at this College; this youth, in 1830, received the appointment of Chinese Translator to the British Merchants at Canton.

have assumed the names of the *hae-shan-hwuy*, 'The sea and land society,' and the *e-hing-hwuy*, 'The righteous rising society.' These two Associations are scattered over all the Settlements; and they all obey the orders and restrictions of the heads of the respective Societies, whom they call 'the great brother.' This stock is divided into four, eight, or twelve great stems, as the case may be, and from these stems there issue scores of branches. Every stem, and every branch, has its headman, who is designated senior brother.

"Emigrants from the hills of *Tang* (China) are called *Sin-kih* (new-comers). As soon as they arrive at any settlement, the brotherhood send persons to invite them to join the confederacy. If they decline they are forthwith persecuted. However, the two above-named Societies often wrangle, and if you belong to the one, and not to the other, you are equally persecuted."—*Chinese Repository*, Vol. II. p. 231.

The Triad Society in China is so well known, that it will only be necessary for me to observe, that their object is the overthrow of the present Tartar dynasty, but the time for its taking place remains in the greatest uncertainty, as they are waiting for some miraculous event to transpire; however, the fraternity are in the mean time expected to use every exertion in their power for increasing their numbers, and hastening the eventful period.

In one of the streets of Malacca, inhabited by Chinese, several of the houses had each a coffin before the door; we were told that these were in readiness to receive the first members of the families that might chance to die, and that it was a common case to see such provision made by prudent people of that nation. As these coffins are of an uncommon shape, I will give a description of one which will serve for all. They are composed of four extraordinarily thick slabs of wood, only the bottom one of which is flat, the top and the sides are convex on the exterior, and concave on the interior. The planks project beyond the head and foot, similar to the chimes of a cask.

Malacca has lately become very dull both as regards its society and its trade. The great reduction made a short time ago in the Honourable Company's Civil Establishment is said to be the cause of the first effect, while the increasing prosperity of Singapore had produced the last. The articles exported from Malacca, chiefly for the China market, are rattans and other canes, Straits and Banca tin, beetle leaf, and Areka nut, pepper, &c.

There is a species of trade between the Presidencies of India, the Straits of Malacca, and China, well known by the name of Respondentia. This traffic is carried on by a class of natives, principally Moormen, who trade in the following manner:—They apply to merchants or officers of the Company's ships, for a loan of money or goods, either the ma-

nufactures or produce of the respective Presidencies, which they desire to take in the vessel to the Straits or to China, for sale. The per centage allowed in the sum advanced is as follows:—six per cent. for Penang, seven for Malacca and Singapore, and eight for China. The security, in these transactions, is upon the goods shipped, which are not allowed to be landed until the freight and interest, as well as the principal, or sum borrowed, are paid. The native merchants always accompany their goods. Cotton and opium are generally taken from Bengal and Bombay, and manufactured goods or precious stones, are taken from Madras. Split rattan-work is not unfrequently seen in use at Malacca, as a substitute for glass in a window frame. The celebrated Mangostein fruit is considered to be finer here than in any part of the Straits; but unfortunately for us, the season for them was just over.

"The population of the district of Malacca, including town and country, is computed to be above 25,000; of which two-thirds are given to the town of Malacca, and its vicinity; consisting of Chinese, Malays, Arabs, Klings (or Malabars), Portuguese, Dutch, and English. But the Chinese constitute considerably more than one-third of the aggregate population of the district."

Chinese Repository.

In the afternoon, all our party returned on board the Reliance, to proceed on our voyage; but the wind being very variable and light, we did not

leave our anchorage until six o'clock, when we had a breeze from the southward and eastward. The night turned out dark, cloudy, and threatening, and these Straits are proverbial for heavy squalls, with the most vivid lightning and terrific thunder, of any part of the globe.

Wednesday, September 1.—At noon, Mount Ophir N. N. E. Mount Moir E. N. E. Soon after sunset, we anchored for the night, in nineteen fathoms water, Mount Formosa bearing E. N. E.

Thursday, 2.—At two, this afternoon, we saw several boats, which we supposed to belong to a man of war, chasing and firing at some Malay prows, among a group of small islands to leeward of us, and at four o'clock, a large ship was perceived to windward; this proved to be H .M. S. Southampton, with which we exchanged signals, but had no further communication, as she continued her course towards the boats, while we proceeded on our voyage.

At six o'clock, we wer eabreast of the southernmost point of the continent of Asia, which is named Tung Jong Boles. The wind having changed directly against us about an hour before midnight, we were obliged to anchor near the Rabbit, or Coney Islands.

Friday, 3.—At daylight we made all sail for Singapore Roads, at which place we anchored about eleven in the forenoon.

The purser and surgeon, with Mr. Astell and

myself, left the ship before she came to an anchor, and landed at the town, very conveniently, abreast of Mr. Johnstone's house. This gentleman is one of the principal English merchants at Singapore, of which there were then about half-a-dozen. There are, however, a great many merchants, traders, and pedlars of various nations settled here, the majority of whom are Chinese. The latter had all their houses consumed by fire, only about twelve months previous to our visit, but before our arrival they had all been commodiously and tastefully rebuilt. The articles of export are the same as those of Penang and Malacca, commonly called Straits produce, with the exception of sago,* the preparation

* "There are ten manufactories for sago at Singapore, which give employment to upwards of 200 Chinese, besides a number of carpenters, who are constantly employed in making boxes.

"The following is a close calculation of the quantity of pearl sago manufactured in this settlement, and exported to various parts during the year 1833:—

To England . .	17,060	peculs. (133⅓lbs.)
" Calcutta . .	1,700	—
" Bombay . .	920	—
" Madras . .	260	—
" China and Manilla .	300	—
" The Cape . .	150	—
" Hamburg . .	1,370	—
" America . .	300	—
" Sundry places, as Ceylon, Penang, Malacca, &c.	520	—

"The greater part of the coarse Borneo sago, imported in the

of which, for the Indian and European Markets, is, I believe, wholly confined to Singapore, where it has become a staple article of commerce. This place, however, derives its greatest advantage from being a free port, which occasions many cargoes that are brought here from China, and other places, to be landed, and reshipped. This gives employment to a number of persons, and a great deal of money is circulated, not only for the hire of stores, boats, &c. but for the purchase of provisions, masts, and yards; as well as for the repairs done to vessels. Besides this, timber is so cheap here, that many masters of vessels purchase spare spars to take away with them.

Several boats came off to the vessels in the roads every day, bringing poultry, fruit, vegetables, &c. for the table; and generally a number of birds, which come from Amboyna, and other islands of the Eastern Archipelago. These consist of maccaws, cockatoos, parrots, parroquets, lauries, lauriquets, game cocks, and Java sparrows. Turtle are also very abundantly supplied by the Malays, and a great variety of coral; that which is recently taken from the rocks has a most offensive smell, owing to the rapid decomposition of the vegetable matter which adheres to it. A gentleman was kind enough to put some in a locker of my cabin, thinking, perhaps, that I should not discover it; but my olfactory nerves must have

same year, was principally exported to Penang and Malacca, where it is used as an article of food by the poorer classes of natives."

been very imperfect, had they not speedily been sensible of the presence of so unpleasant an effluvia.

The French corvette, La Favorite, left Singapore a few days before our arrival. H. M. brig, Zebra, and the Southampton, were both cruizing among the islands, to check the depredations of the Malay pirates, whom it is impossible totally to put down, on account of the numerous small islands in these parts, forming so many channels for the favourable escape of these freebooters; and the character of the natives is so congenial to the predatory habits of these sea-robbers, that even the crews of the smallest boats imitate them in piracies, whenever they have an opportunity of effecting their purpose, either by stratagem or force. All the Malays are armed with a deadly weapon, called a cresse, which is carried, sometimes openly, and sometimes secretly, about their persons.

When merchant-vessels are becalmed among these islands, or gliding along with a light breeze, these people watch, and single out their prey, which they silently approach in the dead of night; and while the crew imagine they are sleeping securely, with probably the only exception of the man at the helm, they drop quietly and unsuspectedly alongside, and leaping suddenly on board, armed with their daggers, they murder the whole crew, in detail.

So soon as they have obtained possession of the vessel, they either plunder it and make off, or if there is a favourable breeze, they run her on shore,

under an island, where they ransack her at their leisure.

A friend of mine, a Lieutenant in the navy, who commanded a merchant vessel, going through these Straits, paid off one of these freebooters in their own way. Having perceived something on the water, ahead of the vessel, a short time before daylight, he suspected it to be a pirate boat, and prepared his crew accordingly; then pointing a gun directly at the object, well loaded with round and grape shot, he waited until it came within a few yards, at the time her crew were prepared to board; the gun was then instantly fired, and the loss must have been dreadful; the extent of it, however, was not known, as they contrived to get out a few oars, and pulled the boat away with the utmost expedition.

Saturday, 4. — I slept and breakfasted at the house of Mr. Johnstone, where there was a large party; and among others, I met a townsman, Lieut. Warren, of the 85th Madras Native Infantry, then stationed at Singapore, but in daily expectation of being relieved by another regiment from the Bengal Presidency. The meeting with a townsman in a foreign country, who happens to be acquainted with one's relatives and friends, is very similar to meeting with a part of one's own family; for a bond of union is immediately formed, that is frequently never afterwards broken.

"The population of Singapore, according to a census taken January 1, 1833, is 20,978. Of these,

8,517 are Chinese, 7,131 are Malays, 119 are Europeans, 96 are Indo-Britons, 300 are native Christians; the others are Armenians, Jews, Arabs, Javanese, &c."—*Chinese Repository.*

About eleven o'clock, I returned on board in a small country boat, the name and model of which are taken from the Chinese, called a Sam-Pan, the literal meaning of which is "Three Planks." In the afternoon, we made sail out of the roads, but as both the wind and tide were against us, we could not make much progress, and soon after sunset anchored for the night.

Sunday, 5.—We got under weigh at daylight, and the weather being very fine, the sail must have been delightful to those who could enjoy the picturesque scenery which these islands afforded.

The beauties of the beautiful
Are veiled before the blind,
Not so the graces and the bloom
That blossom in the mind.

The beauties of the finest form
Are sentenced to decay;
Not so the beauties of the mind,
They never fade away.

As the wind freshened a little, about noon, we were not without hope of entering the China Sea, before the close of the day; for Point Romanio was in sight, bearing N. E. $\frac{3}{4}$ E. and not more than three or four leagues distant; the passing of which would launch us fairly into it. This we accomplished by four o'clock in the afternoon, having brought the Point to bear W. of us, and

Pedro Branco, a large insulated white rock, S. E. ½ E. between which and Point Romanio, it was desirable to pass, as it would save running to leeward, out of our direct course. The channel is not very wide, but it is deep, and very safe with a fair wind. We were now to make the remainder of our passage alone, as our consort from Calcutta, the General Harris, had left Singapore the day before we arrived.

Monday, 6.—The account of a sea voyage is always uninteresting to the general reader; and as there is nothing very particular to remark in a passage up the China sea, except that we saw a number of pulos (islands), whose uncouth names would not be very agreeable to the ears of those who do not understand them; I shall, therefore, only make a few cursory observations on the weather, occasionally giving the latitude and longitude, to shew the ship's progress, for the gratification of those who may be curious enough to desire to see our situation on the map, or to have an idea of the navigation of the China sea, towards the termination of the s.w. monsoon; at which time the wind does not continue very steady, and bad weather may generally be apprehended, even to a typhoon. There were several islands in sight to-day, and three strange vessels in the course of the afternoon, but we did not get near either of them.

Sunday, 12.—We made considerable progress during the last week, from the constancy of the prevailing s.w. monsoon; but this morning, there

were evident symptoms of a change, from the threatening appearance of the sky, the variableness in the wind, and the frequent heavy showers. At noon we were in lat. 13°. 11′. N.—long. 112°. 56′. E. In the evening the wind gradually veered round from N.W. to N.E.; and during the night, it went quite round the compass; fearful indications of the breaking up of the S.W. monsoon, and creating no small apprehensions of a typhoon.

Thursday, 16.—For the four last days the weather has been very unsettled. To-day we were in lat. 20°. 30′. N.—long. 114°. 3′. E.—Wind southerly.

A sea voyage is so extremely monotonous, that it requires some management to enable any person to pass their time in an advantageous manner:—in the first place, there is so much confusion early in the morning, in washing the decks, making sail, and putting every thing in order for the day, that the utmost the earliest riser can accomplish, is a short walk on deck before breakfast, for the sake of a little fresh air. For my own part, I generally portion out the day as follows:—After breakfast, I employ myself with a reader for three or four hours: a walk fills up the interval till dinner time. Between dinner and tea I pass in conversation at table, or a walk. After tea, reading again; and the remainder of the evening, when the weather is good, I spend on deck, till midnight, or perhaps a little later. This exercise usually ensures me repose for the remainder of the night.

Friday, 17.—At break of day we saw a group of islands on the coast of China, among which there are various channels, convenient for vessels that desire to enter the Tigris, for the port of Canton.—About nine o'clock dark and threatening clouds arose over the land; and at ten, we were taken aback with a breeze from the northward, and very heavy rain. Soon after noon it fell calm; but, at one o'clock, a breeze sprung up from the eastward; and a large Chinese boat having come pretty near the ship, one of the men got into a sam-pan (a small skiff), and brought some fish to us for sale. We inquired the name of some of the islands, which he refused to tell, unless we gave him a dollar for his information. This every one declined doing, as we were determined not to encourage his avarice; who, but a Chinese, would have thought of demanding money upon such a plea? This man exhibited another peculiarity common to his countrymen; which was, that although he knew only a few words of English, and those so imperfectly as to be almost unintelligible; yet, when Mr. Astell endeavoured to assist him, by explaining our conversation in his own language, he would not condescend to answer one word in Chinese. I was afterwards informed, that, although Dr. Morrison will sometimes talk to them for hours, in their own tongue, there are few who will reply to him in Chinese, but persevere in speaking an English jargon, which they learn from each other; preferring this method of acquiring it,

to learning it correctly from English masters, whom they might easily procure.

At three o'clock a boat belonging to the Comprador, who had attended the ship on a former voyage, came alongside. Compradors are persons licensed by the Chinese government, to attend on and supply foreign ships with pilots, provisions, &c. They are, consequently, responsible persons, and of no small importance among their own countrymen. The word Comprador literally means "provider," and each of the foreign merchants who reside in Canton, has a Comprador, who not only provides his table, and every thing belonging to the house, but also hires, and becomes responsible for the conduct of the servants. As the Compradors know the time at which each of the Company's ships are expected to arrive in China, they generally keep a boat on the look-out, off the entrance of the passage by which they are expected; however, it does not follow that they always proceed by the same channel, for it must in a great measure depend on the land they first make, and that of course on the wind.

The Chinese are remarkable for the skilful management of their boats, and it is surprising to see the judgment and dexterity displayed by the persons in the pilot-boats, on approaching vessels at sea, for they have been known to run up alongside a ship in full sail, going at the rate of eight or nine miles an hour, and safely deposit a pilot on board.

As we approached the land, several boats came

off to the ship, At six we entered the Lema Passage; and about ten o'clock we anchored in seven fathoms water, between the islands of Lantao and Achow, where we were about the same distance from Lintin Roads, as we were from Macao, that is, about twenty miles from each. Macao lies about the same distance from Lintin, forming a complete triangle. Being thus snugly anchored among the islands, our apprehensions of a typhoon were much abated; for had one come on—although the ship might have been driven on shore—there was every chance of the persons on board being saved.

Saturday, 18.—As Captain Timins intended to proceed up the Tigris to the established anchorage at Whampoa, Mr. Astell and myself made arrangements for accompanying the Purser to Macao, who was going there to report the arrival of the ship to the Chief of the British Factory, and take on shore the despatches and letters.

We left the Reliance in the Comprador's boat at daylight in the morning, and anchored off the town of Macao about eight o'clock, when we were immediately surrounded by a number of small boats, called tanka boats, pulled by women, all of whom made a most hideous noise in their vociferous solicitations to be employed; and several, who recognised Mr. Astell, continued calling to him, "Missa Assa," until we were seated in one of their craft to take us on shore. These boats derive their name from their egg-like form. They are from ten to

twelve feet in length, and have a kind of house in the middle part, formed of a covering of matting over a frame-work. Women are always employed in these boats, where they cook, live, and sleep. In bad weather they are hauled up on the beach, where they still serve as a dwelling to their owners. They are managed in the following manner:—one woman stands in the bow, and pulls an oar on one side, while another is stationed with an oar at the stern, with which she steers, or sculls, as required.

On landing, I went to an hotel a short distance from the beach, where I was soon surrounded by a number of officious Chinese servants, some recommending their friends, and others offering themselves for hire; to get clear of them, I said, that I wanted nothing but breakfast; upon which they enumerated a variety of things; amongst others, they asked if I would have some *lice*, and when I inquired what was meant by that revolting term, the man, with astonishment, exclaimed, "What! you no like lice?"—As I could not understand him, I ordered those things which accorded with my taste and knowledge, and made a hearty breakfast upon some good fresh fish, bread, butter, and tea; but as the fellow still pressed me to take some of his favourite dish, I desired him to bring it, when I found that he meant *rice*, and I afterwards learnt that the Chinese cannot pronounce the R, but, like some of our northern brethren, convert it into an L; for example, for *red*, they say *led*.

Soon after breakfast I accompanied Mr. Spawforth in a visit to Camoens' Cave, which is about a mile from the town of Macao, and is situate within the grounds belonging to a house that was built some years since, by Mr. Roberts, of the British Factory, whose mortal remains are deposited in the garden. This ideal cave (I say *ideal*, because it would require the imagination of a poet to consider it one), is merely an artificial construction, formed by a large opening, made through a projecting limestone rock, the sides of which answer for walls, and the roof is formed of a slab of granite. A *real* summer-house has been erected on the main rock, close to the roof; from whence there is a most picturesque view of Macao roads, the harbour, and the surrounding islands.

The best house and garden at Macao is that within these grounds, which was then occupied by Mrs. Fearon, whose husband was a resident English merchant at Canton.

In the afternoon I accompanied Mr. Astell to wait on the Chief of the British Factory, Mr. Baynes, and dine with the gentlemen composing that body, where we had an excellent dinner, *a la mode Anglaise:* the servants were all Chinese, excepting an English butler. The dining-room was very spacious; and there was a library, with some smaller rooms adjacent, and a large balcony, where we took coffee. These apartments are for the use of the gentlemen of the establishment in common;

but the elder members of the body, generally distinguished by the title of Supercargoes, have each their private residence in the town; and one of them, Mr. Jackson, kindly invited me to take up my quarters at his house; an invitation which I gladly accepted.

There is a large house rented by, or belonging to, the Factory, for the use of the junior members. During their stay at Macao, all the members of the Factory breakfast at home, but dine at the general table. At Canton, breakfast as well as dinner is prepared every day in their common hall. The members consist of a Chief, or President of the Council, (called the Taepan, by the Chinese,) twelve Supercargoes, and eight junior members, who succeed in rotation, as any deaths or retirements take place among the higher branch. There is also a Chaplain, two Surgeons, a Tea-taster, and a Chinese Interpreter. I was so fortunate as to meet an old acquaintance among these gentlemen, (Mr. Hudlestone,) but I was so kindly treated by the whole body that I could not but consider them all as friends.

Sunday, 19.—I accompanied Mr. Astell, to attend Divine service at an apartment in the Factory, performed by the Rev. Mr. Vachell. There was a very respectable congregation, consisting of all the persons belonging to the Factory; families of the resident foreign merchants at Canton; temporary residents from India, &c. After church, I received

a number of visits; and at three o'clock I went to dine with the gentlemen of the Factory, where I met two members of the Spanish Factory, and Mynheer Neumann,* a professor of one of the colleges at Berlin, who made the visit to China, for the purpose of studying the Chinese language practically, and to collect a number of works by the best authors of that nation. He had already made some progress in the language, before he left Germany, and knew enough to be able to transact business with the people.

After dinner, I accompanied the Rev. Mr. Vachell in a walk to the barrier wall,† on the isthmus which forms the Peninsula of Macao, and which none but the Chinese are allowed to pass. It is about two miles distant from the town, and is the longest walk in any direct line, that is to be found on the Peninsula. We wandered along the beach some distance before we arrived at the barrier, and passed a Chinese junk, that had been cast on shore, during the violence of a typhoon, about two years before.

Two days before our arrival, the shock of an

* Notwithstanding there is a rigid prohibition against Chinese books being sold to foreigners, Professor Neumann found no difficulty in procuring all that he desired to obtain, and to prevent their being seized on the way to the ship, he paid a stipulated sum, for each case, to the mandarin, who betrayed the trust to his Government so openly, that he even sent some of his men to pack them, at the professor's lodgings.

† The Chinese built this wall about thirty-five years after the Portuguese began to settle at Macao.

earthquake had been felt, both at Macao and Canton, a little before midnight, but it had not been so severe as to do any injury.

Monday, 20.—I removed from my hotel to the house of Mr. Jackson, whom I accompanied to dine at the Factory, where I met Mr. Chinnery, a celebrated artist, who had resided many years in Calcutta, and whose portraits and paintings are there much admired. He requested me to sit to him for my portrait, and I was prevailed upon to accede to his wish.

Tuesday, 21.—Mr. Lindsay, the Secretary to the Factory, left Macao for Canton, this evening, to open the business of the season; and he was to be followed by the rest of the members, in a few days; who are all obliged to reside at Canton, from the time the business of the season commences, until the last of the H. C. ships leave China; a period of time which usually occupies between four and five months. The remaining part of the year, these gentlemen pass at Macao, which is a more cool and pleasant residence, and where, during the business season, their wives and families remain. An innovation of this rule had been attempted the season before, and an effort made to establish the right of taking European ladies to Canton. But more will be said hereafter upon this subject.

Wednesday, 22.—The weather became finer and apparently more settled, to-day. The H. C. S. London, from Madras, passed through Macao roads, for

Lintin; and her purser, Mr. Lenox, with Sir James Home, came on shore at Macao.

During the following week, nothing remarkable occurred; but as every thing was new to me, I found sufficient variety of interest to pass my time very agreeably. Besides having more society than I expected, the walks were more numerous than could have been looked for in so small a place.* The middle of the day was too hot for exercise, and the gentlemen, as well as ladies, were in the habit of being carried about in a kind of sedan-chair, made of wicker-work; but in the evening, every one takes walking exercise, as there are not more than two or three horses in the town, and they belonged to some of the gentlemen of the Factory. The space in any direction I have already observed is not considerable, and the roads, or rather foot-paths, are very bad, as are likewise the streets, indeed there is but one good promenade in the town, called the Praya Grande, between the line of buildings, that form the Factory, and the sea, extending nearly half a mile; but it is so near the shore, that in bad weather the sea breaks over it, and sometimes does great injury.

Macao was strongly fortified by the Portuguese, after the unsuccessful attack made upon it by the Dutch in 1622, with fifteen sail of vessels under

* The circuit of the Peninsula is said to be eight English miles, its greatest length three, and its breadth about one.

the command of Cornelius Rogers, who bombarded the town on the 23rd of June, and on the following day landed about 900 men in Cacilha Bay, where they were repulsed with great slaughter. This attack induced the Portuguese to build walls and forts, but as they had no cannon, they applied to the Governor of Manilla, who sent them an engineer to founder cannon for their forts, all of which I visited at different times. That called the Guia Fort is the highest in the island, and is difficult of access. It mounts 20 guns of different sizes, and commands the roads, town, &c. The Monte Fort is in the town on a hill of moderate elevation, just at the back of the Governor's house, which stands near the Praya Grande. This fortification had 41 pieces of ordnance mounted, of various calibre, besides six small ship guns, for saluting the Chinese mandarins. Among the former were two large brass pieces, one 14 feet 10 inches long, cast in the place in 1626; and the other in 1628, 15 feet 8 inches in length. The Bar Fort, as its name would imply, is built near the entrance of the harbour, named Cacilha Bay, where none but Portuguese or Spanish vessels are allowed to enter, excepting under particular circumstances. The yacht* which belongs to the gentlemen of the British Factory, is one exception to this rule. This Fort is built for three

* This is a cutter of 75 tons, the frame of which was built at *Cowes*, brought out in one of the H. C. ships, and put together at *Macao*.

tiers of guns; the upper tier is at present unoccupied, and on the two others there are eighteen mounted. The fourth and last Fort is called the Franciscan, situate at the N.E. point of land, and at the termination of the Praya Grande in that direction. This Fort likewise mounts 18 guns, of different sizes, amongst which is a brass gun of 16 feet 4 inches in length.

From this statement it would appear that Macao is a strongly fortified place, which it would be if the fortifications were kept in good order, and was properly garrisoned by efficient soldiers and engineers; but at present it is very questionable whether it is supplied even with ammunition sufficient to defend it against an enemy's attack. However, after all, the Portuguese can only be said to enjoy the nominal possession of the town, for the Chinese mandarins govern it at pleasure, levying customs, &c., as suits their convenience.

The census taken in 1822, will shew that the Portuguese inhabitants bore but a small proportion to the Chinese at that time, and I believe there is no considerable change in the population since:

Portuguese, free men, and boys	1,077
Slaves - - -	539
Women of all classes and colours, under Portuguese authority	2,693
Chinese of both sexes -	45,000

If Great Britain were to take possession of Macao, garrison it with native troops from Bengal, and

declare it a free port, it would be one of the most flourishing places in the East. This might indeed be said of any island, or tract of land in this neighbourhood which our nation might select as a territory, for the Chinese are so fond of smuggling, that they would not hesitate to trade with foreigners if they could be assured of receiving protection; and there is no doubt that they would use all those arts of bribery with their own countrymen, which would be necessary to promote their own ends, and which are so irresistible to the equivocal integrity of the Chinese. By these means, therefore, there is not a doubt that a very extensive and productive trade might be established with China, and very important advantages secured to the British nation. When these facts are so self-evident, it is wonderful that some measures have not yet been taken to secure the commerce, and to protect the merchants from the insults and obstacles that are now so much complained of, as well as to lower the bullying and imperative tone which the Chinese at present think fit to adopt in all their mercantile transactions.

Diseases of the eye are very common in China, particularly among the lower order. There is a small hospital at Macao especially devoted to the cure of these disorders, supported by voluntary contribution, and instituted by Mr. Colledge, the second surgeon of the British Factory, who holds a high place in the estimation of the Chinese, partly for his surgical skill, and partly by virtue of his

charitable disposition, which prompts him to afford them the fullest benefit of his abilities *gratis;* a fact that is more sure to win the favour of this sordid people, than would the utmost stretch of human perfection, less liberally appropriated. In this instance, however, their confidence is not misplaced, for Mr. Colledge is esteemed by his own countrymen no less than the Chinese, to possess a very superior degree of ability, especially as an oculist; and as the Chinese surgeons are utterly ignorant of this branch of art, and entirely decline to perform any operation upon the eye, his services in China, in that department of science, are quite invaluable. It seems indeed that a spirit of the most genuine philanthropy pervades the medical profession here, for Mr. Pearson, the senior surgeon of the Factory, is still more celebrated for the signal services which he has conferred upon the Chinese. He has resided twenty-five years in China without leaving it, and accompanied Lord Amherst's Embassy to Pekin. He wrote a pamphlet describing the discovery and progress of vaccination in England, and also the King of Spain's laudable efforts to communicate the blessing, by sending a ship round the world expressly for that purpose. This pamphlet was translated into Chinese by Sir George Staunton, whose name, with that of Mr. Drummond, and the original author's, were prefixed thereto. Had this been the only service that Mr. Pearson ever rendered the Chinese he would be entitled to

be considered as a national benefactor, but his gratuitous professional services to them, and indeed to persons of all nations, have been daily and unceasing, and I, among the rest, have personal obligations to acknowledge from him that enforces me to record his name with feelings of imperishable gratitude.

CHAP. II.

Symptoms of a Typhoon—Resistance of the Chinese to Local Improvements—Curious Petition—All objects attainable in China by Bribery—Perambulatory Barbers—Bridal Alms-begging—Divine Service in the Chinese Language—Leave Macao for Canton—Chop-boats—Definition of the word "Chop"—Inner and Outer Passage—Heang-Shan—Arrival at Canton—Customary reception of the Gentlemen of the Factory, by the Resident British Merchants—Suburbs of the City—Line of Hongs—Amusements on the River—Joss-house—Chinese Mode of computing Tonnage—Defect in our Maritime Laws—Bamboo Hats—A Lucky Day for the Dead—Siamese Junk—Flower-boats—Grotesque Costume for Wet Weather—Chinese Pleasure-grounds—Shops—Provisions at Canton—Method of Snaring Birds.

Wednesday, Sept. 29, 1830.—THE weather has been generally warm and fine throughout the preceding week; but this day we had a cold fresh northerly breeze, accompanied by small rain, and other indications of an approaching typhoon. The Chinese, and Portuguese, warned by the signs of the weather, got up all their boats high and dry on the beach, and made other preparations for the expected visitation. At night, the wind increased, and came in such fierce gusts, that I entertained apprehensions that the windows, frames and all, would have been blown into my apartment. It was quite a miracle how the chimneys and roof of the house

escaped. On the following morning a ship came down from Canton, and anchored in the Typa. She was totally dismasted, and had dragged her anchors a considerable distance. Fears were entertained that she would be driven on shore; but, fortunately, the wind moderated towards the afternoon, and she received no further injuries. On Friday we ascertained that this vessel was the Sherbourne, Captain White, belonging to Calcutta. Throughout the whole of Thursday night there were heavy squalls, with occasional rain: but on Friday evening the wind fell again, and the rain continued heavy, so that we believed the gale to be entirely broken up. The Praya Grande, or quay, facing the road, suffered much from the storm; indeed, in one or two places, there was considerable difficulty in passing on foot. This irruption of the sea rolling over the quay, and the loss of the Sherbourne's masts, were the principal injuries sustained from the gale, which was but a moderate typhoon. Captain White, and Mr. Templeton, a resident merchant of Canton, came on shore this morning; and Captain H. Fowler, with Mr. Copeland, 2nd officer of H. C. S. Lord Lowther, went off in the forenoon, provided with an anchor and cable, to assist the Sherbourne, but their services were declined, and they returned.

The gentlemen of the Factory have imported a few horses for exercise and recreation, a custom which does not prevail amongst the Chinese. Indeed, the streets of their towns are so narrow, that

it would be impossible to make use of carriages, so that the people are compelled to content themselves with sedans or palanquins. The foot-paths from the town of Macao, towards the barrier wall on the isthmus, being very narrow and bad, the Factory gentlemen petitioned the Heangshan Magistrate for permission to widen it. This request, which was very natural in any community desirous of improving its condition, was at once resisted by the villagers of Macao, who, with that obstinancy which is characteristic of the Chinese, shrank at once from the first approach of innovation. These Mongha gentry are chiefly the connections of a late Hong merchant, and an old linguist, the whole of whom have derived whatever prosperity they possess from foreign commerce. The tone of insolence with which they petitioned the Kwanmanfoo against the projected improvement, affords a capital illustration of the pride, ignorance, and slavish superstition by which this selfish people are distinguished. The petition is a curious document, and I hope the reader will think it worth the place it fills.

Translation of a Petition from the Gentry, Bailiffs, &c. of Mongha Village, to the Kwanmanfoo, against the New Road.

(A Prepared Petition.)

"Chaonwanling, who has purchased the degree of Kumshung, with the senior people, Lengkwongchan,

the Tepaon, or Bailiffs, *moutseng*, &c. [nine persons] of the village, Mongha, distant from the city a hundred and twenty le, hereby petition against a lawless and violent road repair, in which the living are insulted and the dead annihilated; and the darkness and light, and wind and water fortunes injured. With head-ach cries, we implore the favour of Government to issue a severe and everlasting prohibition.

"The ground on which barbarians live at Macao, is limited by fixed regulations. On the east side, the Kennel gate is their limit; and on the west, Sampa [St. Paul's] gate, is the boundary. All the ground beyond these limits, is the dwelling place of the Flowery [Chinese] people. There, a clod of earth marks the resting place of the deceased. For several hundred years, Government orders to this effect have been respectfully received, and acted on, without any deviation.

"But in the 7th year of the late Emperor Keaking (A.D. 1802-3), some crafty barbarians, long plotted a villainous scheme, and employed labourers to make a road from Kennel gate to the hill called Bothedog-winding; which was to be a road for rambling play, and running horses abreast. When Chinese subjects saw the injury done to their ancestor's remains, and tombs, they flew up *en masse*, to reason and discussion; and forthwith stopped the thing desired. In twelve years, the old wisdom sprouted out again, and vain hopes arose of making

a road. The then Tsotong, Jug, prohibited it. In the 17th year of the late reign, labourers were secretly bribed, who assumed the liberty of pushing down the great rock of the coming-Dragon, at the red tea-garden hill. The scheme was to make a horse road. The design was reported to Government, and the then Tsotong [conjuror] Cham, examined the place, and decided that the proceeding was very greatly detrimental to the darkness and light, the wind and water fortune. He allowed by Proclamation, a stone tablet to prohibit it, even after digging and scraping away the earth. Should any violate the order, on being represented to Government they would be prosecuted.

"In the 4th year of his present Majesty Taoukwang, the then Kwanmanfoo, and Tsotong, were petitioned against road-making, outside Kennel gate, and they put a stop to it. These cases are all on record. Often have we had to thank the Majesty of Government, for the purity and intelligence, and extraordinary kindness, which have to this day, excited the thanks of the dead and the living. But length of days generates baseness. The villainous barbarians' wicked intentions have again arisen; and suddenly, during the first decade, of the first moon, of the present year, they had the audacity to head several scores of barbarian slaves, each carrying a military weapon, when, at the narrow path for cowherds, and wood-cutters, near the red tea-garden hill, where was an impor-

tant vein of the coming Dragon, they dug up and lowered away a piece of rock to widen the path for the horse road. Old grave booths, and tomb *cumuli*, that impeded the horse road, were at their pleasure scooped away, that they might have the sport and play, of going and coming on a broad horse road.

"Now every man has had ancestors, and how can any man sleeve his hands, stand by, and look on the bones and flesh of his ancestors as he would on a wayfaring man. The natives roused the Macao runners to petition all the local magistrates, and had to thank the late Tsotong, Cham, for ordering the runners to suppress the proceeding. A temporary sleep took place; but unexpectedly, some native vagabonds, coveting gain, and lost to goodness, espying that Cham, the Tsotong, had gone to Canton on public business, forthwith hooked on with the barbarians, and contracted to hire labourers to form a road, from Kennel gate straight out to Dragon fields, increasing its width along the side of the hill, for the convenience of a horse road, without the least regard to grave booths, and tomb *cumuli*. No fingers can enumerate the injuries sustained by the villagers. But how can eggs conflict with stones! Several scores of people have been obliged to remove the bones of their ancestors, to avoid the barbarians' horse road.

"Humbly reflecting on the path of several hundred years, a level ground thoroughfare, which these villainous barbarians have long desired to

form into a broad road, on which to exercise horses, play, and rove about; we feel happy, that, depending on the favour of Government, they have been interdicted, and prevented from doing so.

"Now again there is a false declaration made, that a road is repairing for the benefit of foot passengers. This is the pretext, but to widen a horse road is the fact. But the Macao barbarians, when about to repair a house, or piece of ground, are obliged by [Chinese] law, to petition and request the golden permission, (of the local mandarins) and even then they are required to make the new exactly like the old. They cannot add a single new beam, nor a single stone. How much more then is the forming a horse road a great violation of existing laws and prohibitions; without having previously petitioned and requested leave, before the bar of all the mandarins, they have presumed to head scores of barbarian slaves; have levelled Government hills, and charity graves, violently rolled down wind and water fortune sands, and rocks, with the unfeeling cruelty of wolves and tigers. How can the laws endure it!

"But there is reason to fear the barbarians' wolfish dispositions will not cease, and that they will again scoop and raze the coming Dragon's wind and water important vein, and then it will be impossible to preserve the tranquillity and happiness of the hundreds of families who compose that village.

"We rely on a benevolent Magistrate's virtuous rule, who is possessed of integrity and intelligence;

and who loves the people as his own infant children. We, therefore, have, in this document, pointed out successively the facts, and knocking head before the Bar, prostrate, beg for condescending commiseration, and that our cause may be transmitted to all the great authorities! Moreover, we beg that a prohibitory Proclamation may be issued to cut off all future creepers. Then the living and the dead will equally be grateful for the kindness received, for ten thousand generations to come: with intense earnestness, we lay this before the bar of our venerable Father, for his decision and concurrence.

"Appended are two sketches, or plans, of the projected horse road, to be opened by the barbarians.

"*Taoukwang, 8th year, 2nd Moon.*"

To this petition, the Kwanmanfoo replied by a very authoritative edict, prohibiting the work, and stating that he had already ordered the barbarian eye to interdict it altogether. Perhaps an explanation of the meaning of this title may not be uninteresting. The barbarian eye is a name applied by the Chinese to the procurator of Macao. He is the medium of intercourse between the Chinese government and the British residents, and is designated by this insulting epithet, under an affectation of ignorance as to what name he ought to be called. Hence they give him this vague title of Headman, allowing him, however, only the functions of a part of the head, "an eye," to observe what is going

forward, but denying him the possession of any brains, to enable him to act upon his vision. Such is one of the specimens of the numerous insults that these audacious people fling upon foreigners.

Notwithstanding the decision of the Kwanmanfoo, the Heangshan magistrates sanctioned the making of the new road, which was accordingly proceeded with. The difficulty respecting the burial ground was easily overcome. The Chinese, impenetrable to every thing else, are never insensible to the influence of bribery. They are the most corrupt people on earth: an assertion I shall have abundant means of proving before I close my narration. The removal of the graves was granted by the families of the interred, on being paid a fixed sum each, I think about nine dollars. I really believe that China could be purchased out and out, if a largesse sufficiently great could be procured. Since the opening of the new road, the English have established annual races at Macao.

Saturday, Oct. 2.—Some officers of the H. C. ships at Whampoa inspected the Sherbourne to-day, and found that the only damage she received was the loss of her masts, and the consequent destruction of her boats and bulwarks. In the course of the day, my attention was called to a peculiar noise in the street, produced by some person passing close to me; it resembled the sound of a tuning-fork, and on enquiry, I found that it proceeded from the Chinese barbers, who perambulate the town with a

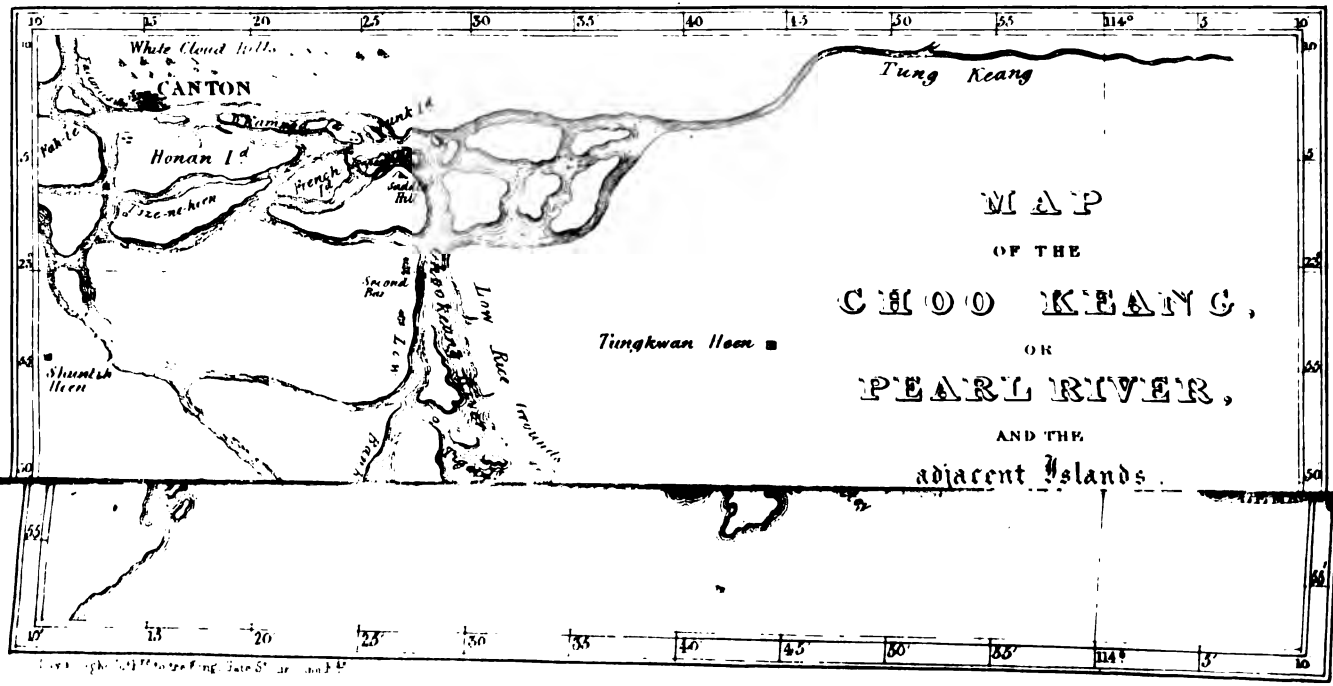
pair of curling tongs, whose points they suddenly pull asunder, and these, by the rebounding vibration, occasion the singular noise.

Walking one evening with a friend, we heard some very melancholy cries, which proceeded from a party of females whom we perceived near a burial ground. My friend informed me that he had heard the same cries every time he had passed in that direction during the preceding month, and that he concluded, from the purpose to which the place was dedicated, that the lamentations were for the loss of some departed relative. The conjecture was reasonable enough, but it did not quite satisfy me; and as a traveller is generally more curious than those whose residences familiarize them with, and render them indifferent to local customs, I questioned some of the natives on the subject, when to our astonishment, we learned that the object of these sorrowful noises was not to exhibit grief for the dead, but to promote the happiness of the living. The case was this:—Two young persons who were strongly attached to each other, were anxious to form a matrimonial connection, but they had not the means of paying the expense of the wedding, which, even with the poorest classes amongst the Chinese, generally amounts to about twenty dollars. The alternative resorted to in such cases, is that which had excited my curiosity. The lovers hired persons to place themselves near the public road, to raise those melancholy cries, the purpose of which was to affect the compassion of their relations and

chief of the Factory, to dine at the public table whenever I thought proper, during my residence at Canton. At eight o'clock, on Sunday evening, I accompanied Mr. Jackson on board: Messrs. Hudlestone and Ravenshaw followed soon after, and about ten o'clock, our little fleet set sail from the inner harbour, consisting of ten sail, together with a fast boat,* and a Comprador to attend to all the wants of those who were on board of the different vessels. About midnight we were obliged to anchor, in consequence of the contrary wind and tide.

Monday, 4.—We got under weigh at daylight, with the tide in our favour, but the wind was still strong against us, and gave to our vessels that chopping motion which fully illustrates their name. This motion was very disagreeable, and we were all glad to keep in our cots until we reached the smooth water of the river, disturbed only by a gentle ripple on the surface. The arm of the sea from Macao to the entrance of the river, is called the Broad Way, and when it blows fresh, there is generally a very unpleasant short sea, produced by the strength of the tide and the shallowness of the water. About ten o'clock, we arrived at the entrance

* A fast boat is, as may be supposed from its denomination, a boat used for expedition, fitted up in the best manner with oars and sails, so that either or both may be employed to the best advantage. They are decked, and built on the same plan as the Comprador's boats, that go to sea to look after vessels approaching the coasts: the only difference between them, is that the fast boats are of much smaller dimensions.


MAP
OF THE
CHOO KEANG,
OR
PEARL RIVER,
AND THE
adjacent Islands.
CANTON
White Cloud Hills
Honan Id
French Id
Tung Keang
Tungkwan Heen
Low Rice Grounds
Second Bar
Shuntsh Heen
114°

of the inner passage leading to Canton, which is only capable of admitting boats or vessels of a small draught of water, and only allowed to be used by native craft. The outer passage, that by which all the foreign shipping proceed to Whampoa, and the Chinese Junks, &c. to Canton, is through the Bocca Tigris. We continued working up the river until three o'clock, when we anchored according to custom, at Heang Shan, a town which is built on both sides of the river, where every boat is visited by a mandarin, who, after the usual enquiries, presents a paper for signature to the principal person on board, certifying that proper civility has been shown to them, and that they have not been unnecessarily detained. This, however, cannot be always conscientiously admitted, as for example, in the case of some English merchants, Messrs. Chrystie, Broughton, and Gover, who, in 1830, were detained on their way to Macao, for two hours, and compelled to pay to the custom-house officers no less a sum than twenty-three dollars, and four hundred and fifty cash; which, however, was returned to them afterwards, upon the presentation of a petition to Chung the Hoppo. In our case, the only annoyance we experienced was from the children, who were very vociferous, calling us Fan Qui (foreign devils), and other opprobrious epithets.

When the necessary arrangements were dispatched, we took our departure from Heang Shan.

The wind was now more favourable, but the tide was against us. About six o'clock our vessel had a narrow escape from being staked in the middle of the river, on some sharp piles, which had been formerly placed there for the purpose of contracting the channel, to render the navigation more difficult to the pirates, and the defence of the river more easy. The evening was fine, and we passed it in reading and conversation, dining about nine o'clock.

Tuesday, 5.—We had squally weather throughout the day, and while we were at breakfast, we wished the master to slacken sail, as the vessel was lying down so much from the force of the wind, that nothing could keep its place in the cabin. But all our entreaties were in vain, and at length Mr. Hudlestone, snatching up a carving knife, ran upon deck, and pretended to cut away the haulyards; but the Chinaman, perceiving his intention, instantly hastened to lower the sails. This slight fact is a complete illustration of the character of the people. They are uniformly overbearing and insulting to all those who happen to be in their power, but cringing and abject to those who exhibit a determination to resist them.

Soon after noon, we came in sight of Canton, and the wind fell so light that we were obliged to have recourse to our sculls. It must appear strange to an European sailor, or boatman, that so large a vessel as I have described could avail herself of such a help; but, singular as it may seem, it is not

the less true. There was a scull worked by five men on each quarter, which greatly aided our progress. But in China this is not remarkable, as the application of sculls is so general that they are used by every description of vessel in the empire, even in the largest junks, where they are worked from a platform extending on each side of the middle of the vessel. Sometimes there are as many as twenty men employed at each scull.

About two P. M., being abreast of the British Factory, the Comprador's accommodation boat, which is roofed over on the after part, came off for us, and we disembarked at the Factory Stairs, leaving our Chinese servants to attend to our luggage.

At last I had reached Canton. My heart beat with tumultuous delight at the thought of having at length planted my foot upon the Chinese territory. It seemed to me like the realization of some long-indulged dream. I had reached, as it were, the destined goal, the *ultima Thule* of my wishes. The disappointment I had experienced while I was in Russia, in not being able to visit the Chinese boundary, enhanced the pleasure I now experienced in feeling myself in the veritable land itself. Every body hears so much of China, of its strict laws, its rigid forms, its motionless manners, and hereditary usages; and it is so prominent in the libraries of anecdote and wonder, that even the curiosity of the child is excited to learn something new of a nation so strangely constituted, and presenting so many

points of interest. It was not extraordinary, therefore, that a traveller, who had visited so many countries, should feel a rush of overwhelming pleasure steal over him on finding himself for the first time in a country, that differs wholly from all others in the world.

The afternoon was cold and showery, and unfavourable to our movements. As six o'clock I accompanied my friend Mr. Jackson, to the house of Messrs. Jardine and Matheson, where the gentlemen of the Factory were invited to dine. This invitation is customary on the first day of their arrival, when the most respectable persons in Canton are asked to meet them, consisting of resident merchants, captains and other officers of the H. C. ships, captains of country ships, (trading between India and China) and the captains of a few other English ships on speculation voyages. On this occasion I had the pleasure of meeting a brother officer, Lieut. Parkyns, who hearing of my intention to visit New South Wales, informed me that he was then making arrangements for proceeding thither, inviting me at the same time, in a very liberal spirit, to become his *compagnon de voyage*. He mentioned, as an additional inducement, the probability that he would touch at Java, and Swan River, for a passage to which place he was in treaty with Sir James Home, whose lady is a sister of the Lieut. Governor, Captain Stirling, R. N.

Wednesday, 6. —I was accommodated with

apartments at the house assigned to the surgeons of the Factory, one of whom always resided at Canton during the season for business, while the other remained at Macao: but during the time when the H. C. ships were absent, they both resided, with the rest of the gentlemen connected with the Factory, at Macao.

I dined to-day, in company with the gentlemen of the Factory, at the house of Launcelot Dent, Esq. This invitation on the second day of their arrival is also customary. It embraces the double object of welcoming the annual return of this respectable body to Canton, and of affording them time for completing their own domestic arrangements. Our party was composed of nearly the same persons as on the preceding day.

Thursday, 7.—After taking tiffen with Mr. Jardine, I accompanied Captain Neish, of the ship Fort William, in a walk through part of the suburbs of the City of Canton, which lie between the foreign Factories, and the city wall. The front part, or entrance to the Factories, is near and almost parallel to the bank of the river, and the intermediate space forms a general thoroughfare for persons who require any communication with the Hongs, as well as those who have to embark and disembark at the different landing places in front of them. There is no regular thoroughfare from the suburbs to the river side through the private Hongs, for the doors at the end, looking towards the suburbs, are

locked day and night, and the front entrances are open only during the day, but there are two intervening streets and a lane inhabited by Chinese shopkeepers, namely, Old and New China Streets, and Hog Lane, which are the general thoroughfares during the day; these, however, are also shut at night, according to the Chinese custom.

The foreign Factories, or Hongs, which run perpendicularly from the bank of the river, are like a succession of private streets, with a few merchants residing in each, whose stores are contiguous to their dwelling-houses. Each Hong has its respective designation; for instance, the first you arrive at on your right hand, on coming up the river, where Messrs. Jardine and Matheson reside, and where there is a landing-place directly in front of it, is called the Creek Hong, in consequence of being next to a creek that communicates from the river to the heart of the city. This creek is a great nuisance at high water to the neighbouring Hong, for at such times it is covered with boats passing to and from the city, loaded either with merchandise coming in, or offal, &c. going out. Other Hongs crowd the bank as you advance, and are generally distinguished by the names of their respective nations, whose flags they display. The English Factory is best known by the name of the British Hong, and is the most considerable of them all. From the advantage of its position it can at any time stop the general thoroughfare in front of the

line of Hongs, but this power is never exercised, except when there is a dispute with the Chinese, in which case the gates are strictly guarded to prevent the admission of obnoxious or turbulent persons. There is no Russian Hong, nor will the Chinese permit any ships of that empire to visit Canton for the purposes of trade, assigning as a reason that Russia already carries on a trade with them on the frontiers of their own country, and that they cannot be allowed to trade in two parts of the Celestial Empire. The following list may perhaps afford a clearer view of these establishments, in the order in which they stand.

1. Creek Hong, Magniac and Co.
2. Dutch Hong.
3. Dutch Factory.
4. British Factory.
   Hog Lane.
5. Chow-Chow Hong.
6. Hired Factory.
7. Messrs. Russell and Co.
8. Imperial Hong,
9. Dent and Company.
10. American Hong.
    Old China Street.
11. Hong Merchants.
12. French Hong.
13. Spanish Hong.
    New China Street.
14. Danish Hong.

The principal recreation of the members of the British Factory, and other gentlemen occasionally resident at Canton, consists in excursions on the water. They have a few excellent rowing boats, which they procure from England, principally Deal gigs, and London wherries. A crew is generally made up at the Factory breakfast-table, for one or more boats to take a row before dinner. Sometimes they have pulling matches, and in passing a Chinese boat they try their speed with various success. Occasionally the gentlemen land on the opposite side of the river for the pleasure of a walk; but in such cases they run the risk of being insulted, and even assaulted by the natives, who follow them with coarse invectives, and often carry their hostility so far as to throw stones after them. Whenever they leave their boats they seldom escape injury, and even on the river, in passing, the rude and audacious natives will sometimes fling stones and missiles at the foreigners.—The contempt in which the Chinese hold all other nations is the first lesson instilled into the minds of children, who not long after they have acquired the powers of articulation, are taught to cry out Fan-qui, (foreign devils), the usual complimentary epithet applied to all strangers.

Saturday, 9.—I went this morning, with Mr. Clark, to the tea warehouse of Gow-qua, one of the Hong merchants, for the purpose of witnessing the method adopted for weighing tea, purchased by the

Factory for the H. E. I. Company. I will explain the particulars of this process in another place. I was extremely surprised to-day at dinner at Mr. Fearon's, the Hanoverian Consul, and brother of a fellow-passenger of mine on board the Dutch Galliot, when I left the Eden for Rio Janeiro, to meet a gentleman who was lately arrived from England, and who was well acquainted with my connexions. The unexpected meeting with this gentleman, Mr. Haylet, who had recently seen my friends, was extremely gratifying.

Sunday, 10.— At divine service to-day, which was performed in the chapel attached to the Factory, there was a large congregation of our countrymen then assembled at Canton: with, however, but one lady, Mrs. Baynes. Yet this was a very agreeable sight to all the English present, as it was only the second season that foreign ladies had begun to make their appearance at Canton; and it was hoped that the barbarous restriction by which they had been hitherto excluded, would be ultimately abolished altogether.

In the afternoon I went with Mr. Reeves, jun. and some other friends, across the river to witness the process of tea-drying. On passing through the village adjacent to the drying-house, we stopped to visit a Joss-house, or Chinese place of worship, the word Joss being, I am informed, a corruption of the Portuguse word Deos. It was a common-place building, having no flooring but that of the

bare earth; but it contained all the figures and articles that are in general use in the religious ceremonies of the Chinese. A large bell was suspended in one part over a great drum, which stood in a frame: the drum had only one head, and there was a peculiarity in the drumsticks that I had never before observed: they were similar in form to the instrument used for turning the discharger of a warm bath, or fountain. On each side of the house there were three large standing figures of their Deities, dressed in a singularly fantastic costume; and, in the centre, there was a small one in a sitting posture, before which, near the wall of the temple, where there was an altar-piece, joss-sticks were kept continually burning. The place was in a very dirty state; and as we were followed by a great number of noisy boys, we were not sorry to take our leave of it. As we passed through the village, several small-footed women and children, on seeing us, fled into their houses, partly, I believe, from fear, and partly from shame.

The Chinese authorities were engaged measuring ships at Whampoa to-day. It is by measurement they compute the tonnage of each ship, and the amount of duty it is to pay for permission to trade. Their method is as follows:—in all three-masted vessels, they measure from the centre of the foremast to the centre of the mizenmast; and in two-masted vessels, from the centre of the foremast to the foremost part of the tiller; the width of all vessels

being taken just abaft the mainmast, from the inside of each gunwale, or waterway.

Some disturbance occurred to-day between the measurers and the crew of an American brig, at Whampoa, in consequence of an attempt of the Captain to take advantage of this mode of measurement. He attempted to deceive them by erecting a temporary third mast, which he contrived by placing a topmast, as a substitute for a mizen-mast, down a hatchway in the after part of the vessel, some feet before the extremity of the tiller. This would have had the effect of decreasing the measurement in length, and would have made a considerable reduction in the Chinese mode of computing the tonnage. Masters of American vessels have often tried them with extraordinary long tillers for the same purpose; but the Chinese are not so easily duped, for in one instance they took out the tiller, and measured from the rudder. Thus the biter was bit.

Monday, 11.—I met Captain Roe of the country ship, Caroline, at breakfast at Mr. Jardine's this morning. His vessel had been freighted with cotton from Calcutta to Canton by some officers of the H. C. ships, but was dismasted in the China sea, during the typhoon that occurred while I was at Macao; and having been met with in this disabled state by the H. C. S. Castle Huntly, she was towed into port, and brought up to Whampoa by that ship. The nature of the

salvage for this service produced, I was informed, a great deal of discussion amongst the parties concerned. Is it not extraordinary that the maritime laws of England, one of the first commercial nations in the world, are so ill-defined and so little understood? more especially that portion of them which refers to the relative position of the officers and the crew? There is scarcely a vessel that sails from Great Britain to any of our colonies, on board of which some disturbance does not arise between the officers and the crew; and not unfrequently a serious mutiny takes place, to resist the authority of the captain and the officers. I do not mean to say that the fault is always on the side of the sailors, for I regret to be compelled to admit that it sometimes originates in the oppressive conduct of the officers, the supply of bad provisions, and other acts of injustice, which those who are in power on board ship have so many means of carrying into effect. Sometimes, on the other hand, a troublesome fellow, who aims at being considered a sort of sea-lawyer, will disorganize the whole crew. He will do every thing in his power to provoke the captain, or some of the officers, to strike him, confine him, and perhaps put him in irons, the object of which is to get what he calls the law of them. One such unruly member will soon spread disaffection amongst the others, and hence frequently considerable disorder is generated. This subject, however, requires to be treated more at large than

would be consistent with the plan and purpose of my humble labours, for the evil is becoming so serious that it is likely to affect in a most alarming degree the commercial interests of the country. I do not know any topic of legislative importance, that demands more prompt and decisive interference on the part of Government.

I accompanied Captain Neish to-day to call on Mr. Dunn, a respectable American merchant, who, after realizing a handsome fortune in China, was just on the point of retiring from business, to enjoy the true *otium cum dignitate* at home. This gentleman has made a vast collection of Chinese models and other productions of native skill and industry, which are well calculated to reward the researches of the curious. We also visited a number of Chinese shops, and purchased, amongst other things, a hat, made from bamboo, which has been well macerated, and beat into a pulp; when it is mixed with a quantity of glue, before it is put into form and dried. You try it in the first instance in frame on your head, until you find one that will fit you, which is then covered with a material similar to that used for gentlemen's silk hats in England, and lined in the usual manner. The Chinaman, by way of a stroke of wit, puts "London" under his name in the inside of the hat. The first I bought cost a dollar and a quarter; but for the second I was charged only a dollar; and I learned that they were sold wholesale at the

rate of three-quarters of a dollar each. These hats are very light and durable, and keep their shape well, so long as you preserve them from wet. They are, therefore, admirably adapted for dry seasons in a warm climate, and are certainly preferable to straw hats, being nearly as light, equally cheap, and less pervious to the rays of the sun. Boots and shoes are very cheap in China, but they are of a kind fit only for warm and dry countries. The leather is very thin and soft to the feet, but, like the hats, are unfit for wet weather. The prices of shoes vary from half a dollar to one dollar and a quarter per pair. One of the curiosities which I examined in my perambulations amongst the shops, was a large punch bowl of China-ware; it was twenty-three inches in diameter, and I could not encircle it with my arms.

In the afternoon I crossed the river to the Island of Honan, for the purpose of visiting the house and gardens of one of the Hong Merchants, named Howqua. Here we found a separate room appropriated to the coffins of the father and mother of the present proprietor, which are thus kept apart and above ground until a lucky day arrives for their final deposit, the Chinese being very superstitious in matters of this kind. The place selected for the grave is generally in a beautiful situation, on the brow of a hill, commanding a picturesque view of the surrounding country. This observation will be understood, of course, as applying only to those classes who can afford to indulge in extra-

vagance, the lower orders not being so particular, compelled as they are by necessity to submit to circumstances. I have already mentioned an instance which occurred at Macao, where a portion of the burial ground of the commonalty was purchased to enlarge the foot-path. Poverty is saleable in all countries, but in China it perhaps is more especially open to purchase than in any other.

Wednesday, 13.—I left Canton at eight o'clock this morning with Messrs. Jackson and Astell in a chop-boat for Whampoa, twelve miles distant, those gentlemen being ordered to proceed thither, in their official capacity, to superintend a survey of four of the H. C. ships, (the Fairlie, the Duchess of Athol, the Thomas Coutts, and the Dunira,) previously to their taking in their homeward bound cargoes. The surveying officers consisted of three captains, three chief-mates, three carpenters, and three caulkers, of the H. C. ships, the report being made out by the above named gentlemen of the Factory, to be delivered by them to the Committee. After visiting the Fairlie, and other ships, a large party assembled at dinner, at seven o'clock, in the chop-boat, when she got under weigh to return to Canton. The day had been very warm, the thermometer at one time being at 87° in the cabin of the boat; but a cool northerly breeze sprung up in the evening, and the tide being in our favour, we reached Canton in about a couple of hours. There is a Custom-house about three miles distant from the

anchorage at Whampoa, and nine from Canton, where all native boats are obliged to stop in order to be examined by a Mandarin, who comes off to ascertain whether there are any smuggled articles on board. The H. C.'s Tender, however, and all ships' boats, are suffered to pass without being subject to examination.

Thursday, 14. — The process of tea-packing, which I will hereafter describe, I witnessed this morning at the warehouse of Gow-qua: and afterwards went on board two country boats that had brought tea to Canton, one of which was then loading with a return cargo of salt. These boats are decked, and of an extraordinary size, but they are well adapted for the navigation of the river, being very long and flat-floored, and having, consequently, but a small draught of water. One of those I visited carried 6000 Péculs, nearly equal to 600 tons. We next went on board a large junk from Siam, which was said to have been built entirely of a species of remarkably hard wood. This vessel was as old fashioned as Noah's ark, and from her various compartments she might have answered for a similar purpose. She was one of the largest class; her mainmast, which was a single tree, merely stripped of the bark, as the other masts were also, measured eleven feet in circumference, and the mizen-mast was outside on the larboard quarter of the vessel. These masts had no rigging whatever. Her anchors, which were

made of wood, the flukes only being tipped with iron, were of an extraordinary size, being thirty-three feet in the shank. Her cables were composed of whole rattans twisted in the same manner as those of hemp yarn. The main piece of the rudder, made of hard wood, was two feet square: the rudder ropes were made of split rattan; and every thing in and about the vessel was on the same rude scale, and similarly heavy and clumsy. Her hold, agreeably to the Chinese fashion, was partitioned across from side to side, at equal distances, the whole length of the vessel. The after part of the upper deck was covered with bamboo cabins, erected for the different owners of the various parts of the cargo. There was a large Joss-house in the after part, containing three figures, one the goddess of the sea, and the other two her satellites. This vessel was the bearer of the annual tribute from Siam to the Emperor of China.

On our return to the shore we passed between a double line of large boats, that are constantly moored in the centre of the river, with the head and stern of each boat so close in line that you might pass along the whole, from one to another, without having occasion to go into a boat. These barges are called "Flower boats," a name they derive from the elegant and ornamental style in which they are fitted up, and carved and gilded. These boats, however, are nothing better than licensed brothels of the first order, for the exclusive use of

the Chinese, foreigners not being permitted to trespass upon them with impunity. The ladies on board, however, do not appear to have any objection to the visits of strangers, if their sentiments may be speculated upon, from their outward signs, for no respectable foreigner can pass these boats without receiving signals of invitation. I have heard of one or two foreigners who were bold enough to venture on board, but who paid dearly for the experiment, although to what extent I cannot really say. Besides the indignities they experienced, they were compelled to pay a large sum for their ransom.

I think it may be generally remarked, that all the Chinese boats are admirably adapted for the various services to which they are destined, and that the boatmen, as well as the boatwomen, are very expert in the management of them. All the boatmen on the rivers are provided with a matting jacket, made with coarse grass, which they wear in wet weather. In conseqence of the way in which these jackets are fabricated, the ragged ends of the grass not being trimmed in the progress of the making, they present a very rough and grotesque appearance, making their wearers look like some strange amphibious animals moving about their boats. But this apparent want of finish is intentional, for the broken points of grass have the effect of turning off the rain, instead of permitting it to pour perpendicularly down the body.

There is a celebrated garden on the Canton side of the river, near the city walls, and about three-quarters of a mile from the foreign Factories, formerly the property of Con-se-qua, but now in the possession of How-qua, both Hong merchants. It is said to have cost the late proprietor 100,000 dollars; and yet, the present owner was, when we visited it, laying out considerable sums on further embellishments, and fanciful alterations. The grounds contain a great number of large buildings, fitted up and highly ornamented in the Chinese taste, with running streams of water, bridges, grottoes, large pieces of rock scattered in premeditated confusion over the surface, and, in fact, a fantastic variety of things to attract and amuse the spectator. The narrow suburban streets that lead to this garden, are occupied by Chinese shopkeepers of a variety of callings, some of which are peculiar to the country, venders of birds' nests for making soups, bechos de mar, harts and rhinoceros' horns hung up in the apothecaries shops to be reduced afterwards into shavings, powders, and pills, which are highly esteemed for their stimulating properties; live fish and tortoises; fish, poultry, and pork, sold in the same shop; there are also eating-houses, where they exhibit in the windows roasting pigs, poultry, &c., lackered; and besides a variety of other trades, there are a number of shops established exclusively for the sale of European manufacture.

The passengers in these crowded streets suffer

much annoyance from the nuisance of porters, carrying large packages on their heads, and beggars, who enter all the shops and make a terrible noise, by discordant singing, accompanied by the clacking sounds produced from striking two pieces of bamboo together, by way of keeping time. The beggars are privileged, by custom, to enter the shops, and make this uproar until the owner discharges them by giving them alms. Some of these wretched mendicants are objects disgusting to the sight from disease and deformity.

The temperature of the weather has a considerable effect on the supply of provisions. Butcher's meat, during the hot season, is scarce, with the exception of pork, and that is always abundant and of an excellent quality. It is chiefly fed on vegetables. In the winter season, however, when the shipping are at Whampoa, beef and mutton is plentiful and good. The Chinese, or rather the Tartar sheep, have a fat exuberance at the tail, like those of the Cape. They are very large and of good flavour, and cost from twenty to thirty dollars each.

Canton is well supplied with excellent river fish, which are brought to the market alive, and even cut up in that state, being sold by weight. I was agreeably surprised one day, at Mr. Jardine's table, to meet my old Russian acquaintance among the fish, that celebrated species of sturgeon, called the sterlet, which is found in the rivers of the eastern parts of Russia and Siberia. Fresh water

soles are very common at Canton, but they are not equal in size or quality to those taken in the sea.

Poultry are plenty, particularly capons; as also are the following descriptions of wild fowl, during the winter season, namely—geese, ducks, teal, snipes, &c. There are great numbers of rice birds (Loxia oryzivora),* which, being caught just after the rice harvest, when they are in good condition, are very well flavoured. Flocks of these birds are usually taken by means of nets; for the Chinese are too economical to spend a charge of powder and shot upon such small birds, when they can devise a cheaper method, by snaring them. In such contrivances they are very ingenious, of which the following mode of catching wild geese is an illustration. Two persons will follow the course of a stream, one on each side, carrying bamboos with a strong white silk thread attached to the ends of the rods: and when a flight of wild geese happens to pass, they are generally able to snare one or more, by entangling their wings in the thread. The birds thus entrapped, rapidly descend, and their fall is facilitated by bringing the rods from a perpendicular to an horizontal position, when they are easily captured by men attending in a boat for that purpose.

* There are more than one species of birds sent up to table in China, under the name of rice birds; but the more general is a species of Alanda, or lark.

They have various plans for catching ducks and other wild fowl with nets, &c. besides the well-known practice of men walking up to their necks in water, with a basket over their head, and seizing them by the legs as they swim past.

CHAP. III.

Engagement on the River between Mandarin Boats and Smugglers—Illegal cultivation of the Poppy—Opium Smoking—Visit to a Hong Merchant—Costume of Children—Presentation of a Petition at the City Gate—Antiquity of the Custom—Chinese Trades—Firmness of the Committee at the British Factory—Preparations for Resistance—Chinese Bombast—The Menace evaporates in Smoke—Excursion to Whampoa—French Island—The Hoppo's Visit of Measurement—Venality of the Custom House Officers—General Cupidity of the Chinese—Duck Boats—A Specimen of the Insolence of the Chinese Government—Return to Canton—Fire in the City—Country Ships—Fah-tee Gardens—English Jargon—Proffer of Pacification—Chow-chow-chop—Sea-stock—Hong Merchants and Hoppo—Chinese Monastery and Temple—Boat-racing—Company's Ships passing the Bogue—Chinese Dinner—Boatwomen—Canton Market—Specie—Airy Barbers and Quack Doctors—Chinese Test of Innocence—Remarkable Instance of Politeness in a Mandarin—Leave Canton—Sail from Whampoa in the Ernâad for Lintin—Opium Ships and Opium Smuggling—Leave Lintin for Macao—Lord Napier's arrival in Canton—Battle of the Bogue—Lord Napier's return to Macao—Emperor's Edict.

Friday, October 15, 1830.—The weather is now becoming cooler. Thermometer 69° at 8 A. M. Some friends of mine who were returning from Whampoa to-day, saw a very amusing fight on the river between two mandarin's boats and a smuggler. One of the mandarin's boats fired a gun at the

smuggler in the first instance, which was immediately returned, although he was making off; and as he pulled 50 oars, assisted by his sails, he soon distanced his pursuers. Meeting, however, three boats of his own calling he joined them, and they all drew up in line to give regular battle to the mandarins. The plan of the smugglers was a little curious. It being flood tide, they formed their line across the river above the mandarin's boats, they then brought their carriage guns to their sterns, wetted their boarding nettings, to prevent them from catching fire, which were all ready to trace up, and, presenting their sterns, they pulled in that position towards the mandarin's boats, which, however, were glad enough to make a precipitate retreat. Thus, in open day, only a few miles below Canton, four smugglers resisted with impunity the government of the country.

Smuggling boats are of an amazing length, and generally pull from 40 to 50 oars. Their weapons of defence are usually one small carriage gun, or swivel, with muskets, boarding pikes, swords, and stones. Their boarding netting is similar to an ordinary fishing net, being intended merely to guard them against the stones. They have also shields for the same purpose. The activity of the smugglers was such that in 1830 the Whampoa magistrate issued a proclamation against banditti, who, he said, infested various rivers of the province to plunder the trading boats. It was a practice among them

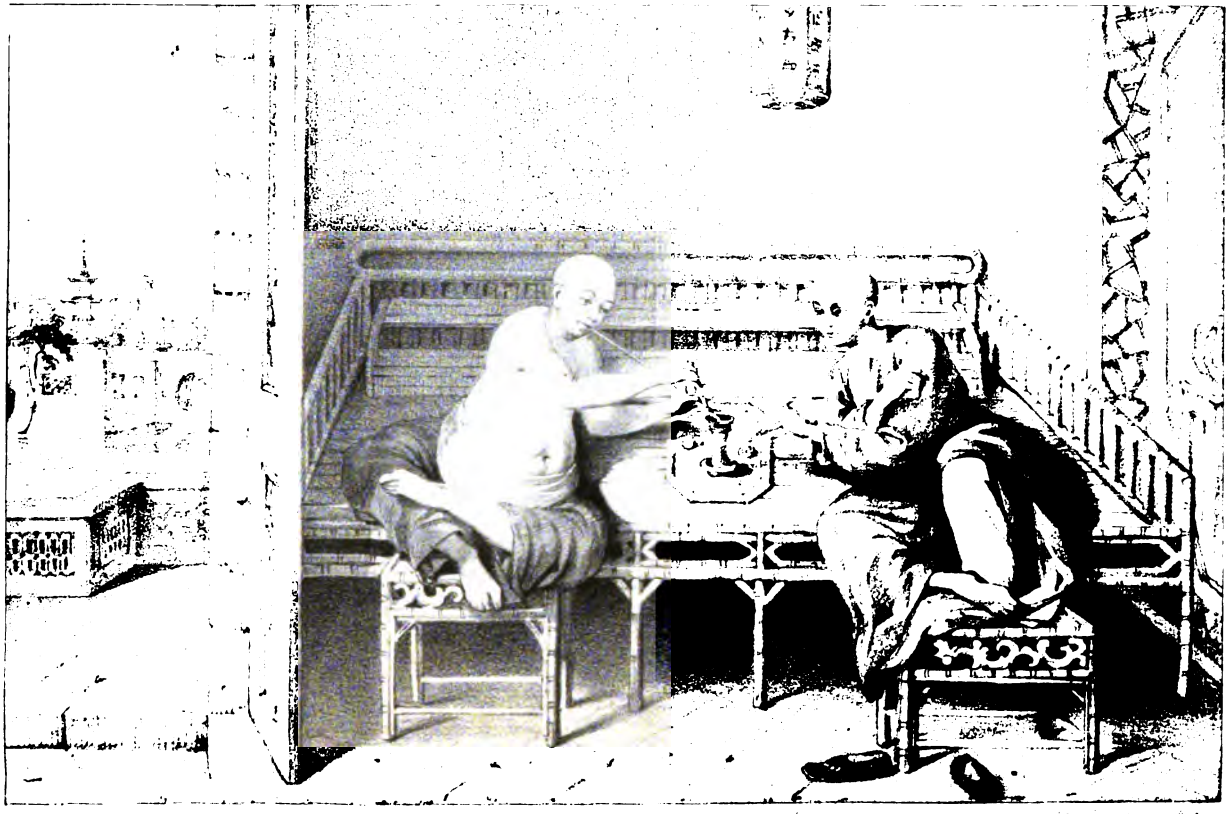
to profess to be government boats come to search the craft in the river. In one instance, a mandarin boat, carrying specie to court, was boarded a little above Canton, by a gang of these fellows who pretended to be the Hoppo's Custom House runners. A struggle ensued, and they were ultimately beaten off without being able to secure any of the treasure.

A very fair sample of opium from the western part of China was brought for examination to-day to the house of Messrs. Jardine and Matheson. The growth of the poppy in China is interdicted by the law, yet, notwithstanding the fact that the local authorities were ordered to punish such natives severely who should be proved to have encouraged the production of opium, which is called the "flowing poison," it was successfully cultivated in the west, and formed a very profitable article of trade. In August, 1830, the superintendent of the roads of the province of Keang-nan, presented a statement to the Emperor in which he set forth that numerous "traitorous natives had lately engaged in planting the poppy and producing opium for sale, that they gained ten times as much from an acre of poppy as from an acre of paddy; and that it was imperative upon his majesty for the sake of the public morals, and the authority of the law, to interfere with severity for the purpose of preventing such a dangerous practice for the future." To this statement an Edict was issued in reply, ordering the local authorities to exercise all their power to prevent the

growth of poppy, and declaring that should any negligence be discovered on their parts in carrying the imperial will into effect, the Emperor would hold them responsible. "Tremble," says the Emperor, and "Respect this."

The Chinese vessels are all distinguishable by an eye, which is invariably painted on the bow. If you venture to inquire into the reason of this curious custom, you are answered with a piece of logic that sets the question at rest:—"Suppose he have no got eye, how can him see? Suppose he no can see, how can him walkie?" This argument is incontrovertible. The love of fantastic forms pervades all things in China. They have a great variety of kites, generally outlined in the shape of birds and fishes, with wings or fins, and glass eyes.

Saturday, 16.—In the afternoon I went with Messrs. Lindsay and Kerr to visit How-qua's house and gardens on the bank of a creek running up at the opposite side of the river. All the furniture of the house was, of course, in the Chinese style, and the garden in corresponding taste. It exhibited the usual diversity of a summer-house, fish-pond, fanciful paved walks, stone table and seats, detached fragments of stones scattered about in imitation of rocks, and large single blocks placed at convenient distances, with smooth but irregular surfaces. These last are useful, as well as ornamental, the Chinese being very fond of using them as seats, and have them not only in the open air,



but in their shops and houses for that purpose. From the garden we went into the school, where we found a private master, employed in teaching the children of the various branches of the family.

We spent the evening at Mr. Jardine's, where his Comprador had prepared opium pipes for some of the party who were anxious to try an experiment of the effect it would be likely to produce upon them. I was prompted by a similar curiosity, and when our pipes were charged we placed ourselves, according to the Chinese fashion, in a recumbent posture upon a couch propped up with pillows: the Comprador then ignited the drug with a red-hot wire, which admits of three or four inhalations each time it is charged. I found two pipes quite sufficient to make my head ache; but this was the only effect it produced on me, for it did not give the least agreeable sensation, either at the time I was smoking, or subsequently, and I was glad to seek relief in a cup of tea. I presume, however, that tobacco would have produced a similar effect. We must, of course, become accustomed to the use of both these powerful narcotics, before we can derive any gratification from them.

Monday, 18.—I paid a visit to-day by previous invitation, in company with the Rev. Mr. Vachell, to the dwelling-house of Tin-qua, one of the Hong merchants. Tin-qua received us with the greatest urbanity and politeness, and, after we had examined the furniture and embellishments of two or three of

the rooms, invited us to take refreshments, consisting of sweetmeats, tea, and cakes. The sweetmeats, he told us, had been superintended in the process of preserving by his favourite wife. The Chinese of rank or fortune consider it necessary to have a small-footed woman for their principal wife, from whom they at least wish to have an heir to their title and property. They have also one or more large footed, or Tartar women, as their inclinations or means can afford, by whom they generally have a numerous progeny. When our refreshments were over, Tin-qua ordered the pipe of one of his Tartar wives, prepared for smoking, to be brought to us. This pipe was very elegant: the main tube, which was of horn, was not thicker than a goose quill, and was about a yard in length; the mouth-piece was made of amber, and the bowl of ebony: both were neatly carved. From the centre of the tube a small and handsome tobacco bag was suspended by a gold chain. My reverend friend, who was a cigar smoker, tried the lady's pipe, and pronounced the weed to be of a superior flavour. That which chiefly gratified us was the introduction of several of Tin-qua's grand-children, who were all girls between the age of six and thirteen. The timidity with which they approached us at first, until by degrees they acquired a slight air of confidence, attracted our attention at once. One of them was remarkably pretty, and might be considered so in any country. They had all fair complexions, with

long black hair and black eyes. The fore-part of the head was shaved a short distance from the forehead, and the side hair hung down in long ringlets, while that behind was plaited into a long tail, and fell over the back like that of the men. This is the usual way in which females dress their hair until they are married, when it is all collected on the top of their head, and confined by gold or silver pins. In former times the fashions were still more preposterous. We learn that in the time of the latter Han dynasty, about A.D. 200, the head-dresses of the Chinese ladies mounted a cubit in height, and that they painted broad eye-brows half way across their foreheads, and wore enormous sleeves that required a whole piece of silk to make them. The grand-children of the merchant wore a loose dress down to their knees, of silk or crape, with large sleeves and loose trowsers. On taking our leave we passed through a room where some children were employed in making gold thread and braiding, which is profusely used in ornamenting their dresses.

Tuesday, 19.—It had been resolved for some time by the gentlemen of the British Factory, as well as the private British merchants residing at Canton, to petition the authorities of the city, against the insulting edicts which had been issued at different periods, affecting the comfort and independence of our countrymen. These edicts were directed against foreign ladies coming to Canton, the use

of sedan chairs by gentlemen, and an annual prohibition by which foreigners were not allowed to employ Chinese servants. Two distinct petitions on these subjects were prepared, and addressed to the four principal authorities; namely, the Governor, or Viceroy; the Hoppo, or Collector; the Foo-Yuen, or Judge; and the Tartar General, or Commandant of the troops. To-day was appointed for the presentation of these documents, and arrangements were made in the afternoon, for delivering them, in due form, at the principal gate of the city. All the captains and a number of other officers belonging to the H. C. ships assembled in the British Factory, with the supercargoes; while the private merchants, captains, and other officers of the country ships, met at the house of Messrs. Jardine and Matheson. At two o'clock both parties sallied forth from the doors of their respective Hongs, and proceeded direct to the city gate. The private merchants, who were a little in advance of the others, passed on with great speed, between running and walking, which brought them to the gate in about ten minutes, where they met with some resistance by the soldiers who guarded it, and who were armed with pikes, and rattan whips. But this opposition was soon subdued by the determined conduct of the assailants, although one fellow had the audacity to strike a gentleman several times with his whip, an instance of daring which is very unusual amongst the Chinese. When the British

party had secured their ground within side the gate, they were resolved at all hazards to maintain it, and they did so. It had been originally arranged that I should accompany the first party; but one of the gentlemen of the Committee made a particular request that I would not, in which entreaty he induced two or three of my friends to join, and I yielded, but with great reluctance, to their solicitations. However, my kind friend, Mr. Matheson, who entered deeply into my feelings, perceiving that I sensibly felt the disappointment, and prompted by the most lively sympathy, came forward immediately after their departure, and offered to accompany me if I still desired to follow them. I need not say that I gratefully accepted his proposal. We came up just as the first party had succeeded in getting within the gate, and were engaged in disputing their position; and before the second party from the British Factory had arrived. Thus, by the kind assistance and judicious management of my friend, Mr. Matheson, I witnessed, without the least inconvenience, the ceremony of foreigners presenting a petition to the proper Chinese authority, a Mandarin, to whom I had a special introduction, at the great gate of the city of Canton. Mr. Matheson was possessed of a feeling and intelligent mind; and, having an uncle suffering under the same affliction as myself, he was the more likely to possess a sincere sympathy for my

situation, and to supply the means of alleviating its occasional mortifications.

The custom of making the gate of a city the place of judgment and council, is very ancient. The first instance in history to which we are referred, is that of Abraham, who confirmed his purchase of a field in the presence of all who went in *at the gate of the city*. From that period it has been the custom, particularly in eastern countries, to transact any business of special importance at the city gate. When the government of the Dey of Algiers was in existence, his Highness entertained all affairs of moment at the city gate. The origin of this custom arose, no doubt, from the notion that publicity is a protection to justice. The Ottoman *Porte* is supposed to be so called in consequence of business being transacted at the gate; and the Emperor of China frequently descends to the entrance of the court of his palace, to hear causes with his great officers of state. There are several allusions to this practice, scattered throughout the Old Testament. The gate of the city of Canton has invariably, and throughout the whole period of history to which we possess an authentic guide, been the place where foreigners have made their appeal for justice to the Chinese authorities. Should the publicity be relinquished, it is feared, and not without reason, that justice will be relinquished also.

The petition presented by the British merchants on the occasion to which I allude, will abundantly shew the contemptuous insolence with which the Chinese treat our countrymen; and from this instance of their boldness, we may infer how far they would go if they dared. They consider us a class of persons inferior to them in knowledge, and depraved by habits of an immoral character. Assuming to themselves the airs of a superior and refined nation correcting the vices and superstitions of an uneducated and depraved race, they take the liberty not only of reproaching us for the crimes which they think fit to charge upon us, but of attempting to prohibit those European amusements which they choose to denounce as criminal. The petition of the British merchants states the grievances under which they laboured, in this form:—

"We have lately seen a proclamation pasted against the English Company's Factory, for the perusal of all natives, containing groundless expressions of insult to foreign merchants, and falsely affirming that they are guilty of crimes, which, in our country, are held by all in the utmost detestation, and never even mentioned without horror and shame.

"It further commands the Hong merchants and linguists to instruct and direct foreigners, and to repress their pride, profligacy, &c. &c. In what, permit us to ask your Excellency, does it appear that we have merited such disgraceful epithets, as

if we were an inferior and depraved class of persons, ignorant of the principles of right reason? It is really impossible for us to submit in silence, to imputations so detestably false, and affirmations so insulting to foreigners."

It then alludes to an edict prohibiting the use of sedan chairs, on the grounds that they signified an invidious distinction of rank, and claims the right of employing them, observing, that in our Indian territories, on the north-east frontier border of China, they are as necessary as food or clothes. It concludes in these terms:—

"A third proclamation, which we have seen, forbids foreign merchants from bringing their families to reside with them at Canton, &c.; a restriction which must be considered as most oppressive in its nature, and shewing a disregard of the social relations of human life in separating husband from wife, and parent from child.

"We have the more confidence in appealing to your Excellency on this occasion, because former Government edicts speak of regarding, with the same benevolence, natives and foreigners. But, in the above prohibitions, the very reverse of this spirit is manifested.

"We hope, therefore, that the great officers of Government will forthwith shew a fair and liberal treatment of foreign merchants. Then all parties may perform their business tranquilly. But, otherwise, it is much to be apprehended that disturbances

will arise; for the special purpose of preventing such, we present this statement, and, with much respect, lay it before your Excellency."

I have given so much of this petition in full, because it will serve to elucidate, by a striking instance, the tyranny which the petty authorities are so well disposed to exercise towards us, if we did not occasionally exhibit our determination to resist their encroachments upon our liberty.

The presentation of this petition, however, was nothing to the success that attended the still bolder measure in 1825, when a body of foreign merchants, to the number of thirty-seven, rushed into the city before the guard had time to close the gate, being determined, if possible, personally to present to the Viceroy, the copy of a petition that had been delivered to a Mandarin, at the gate, eighteen days previously, and to which no answer had been returned. They thought the boldness of this measure would, at least, demand attention, and, probably, prove the surest means of relief from a gross extortion of 300 dollars for a "chop," or pass, to be allowed to proceed to Macao.

Although these gentlemen got a safe footing in the city, they were not sufficiently acquainted with the topography of it, to know the exact situation of the Viceroy's palace; they, therefore, went forward at random, and eagerly made for the first large building they saw, which, on entering, they discovered to be a Joss-house; but, observing a soldier

run out of it, and supposing he would go direct to the Viceroy's palace, to report the extraordinary circumstance of seeing so many foreigners in the city, they immediately followed him; and, after a very smart but short run, they came to another large house, and seeing a number of soldiers in the yard, they made sure it was the Viceroy's palace. All this was the work of a few minutes; indeed, from their rapid movements they astonished the Chinese, and entered the hall before any of them could assemble to obstruct their passage. Here they soon discovered they had entered the residence of the Commandant of that part of the City. After various ineffectual threats, and a refusal to receive their petition, the Hong merchants, at last, agreed, that if the foreigners would quietly and speedily leave the city, they would undertake to have the obnoxious tax wholly removed. With this assurance they left the house, promising to bow to two Mandarins as they passed, who were sitting at the outer gate. They then quietly departed; but when they came abreast of the Mandarins, they were stopped to hear another harangue, which was interpreted by the linguist as follows:—" that they were now supposed to have erred through ignorance; but whoever should be again caught within the gates of the city, should be put to death." The Commandant then, with a blustering air, stepped forward, and putting one hand on my friend Mr. Matheson's shoulder, he made a sign with the other, (by passing it round

his neck) that he ought to lose his head. Mr. M., with the utmost presence of mind, instantly caught hold of the linguist, and twice performed the same ceremony on him, which, strange to say, passed without any remark from the Mandarins; and they were allowed to proceed without any further insult, notwithstanding they had to pass through a dense line of military and populace.

In our case, when the ceremony of presenting the petition was concluded, we returned at our leisure, without experiencing any interruption from the inhabitants of the suburbs; who, although they had assembled in great crowds in the streets, in a spirit of curiosity, exhibited more than their usual politeness in withdrawing to allow us room as we passed on. In the course of the afternoon, I visited, along with my friend, Mr. Matheson, the house of an opium broker,* besides a great number of shops. The sign-

* Notwithstanding all the prohibitions against the use and introduction of this drug into China, here we find professed dealers in the article, and who are well known by all the government authorities to carry on the trade in the most open manner. "This is effected," (says the *Chinese Repository*) "by the payment of certain sums to those officers, who ought to carry into strict execution the imperial laws; occasionally, however, there is a difficulty in determining the amount that shall be paid. Such a difficulty lately occurred between his Excellency the Governor of Canton, and two of the principal brokers, Yaou-Kew, and Gow-Kwan. More money was demanded than there was a willingness to pay; accordingly the check on the law was taken off, and a detachment of soldiers, 200 strong, made a descent on the houses of the above named individuals. They, fortunately for themselves, had absconded; but their families, with all their effects, were carried off."

boards of these shops have rather a singular appearance in the eyes of a stranger, being composed of large pieces of thick plank, placed by the side of the shop, inserted into the wall, or suspended by hooks. The first shop we entered was for the sale of deer horns, which are prepared for medicinal use, by being well cleaned, then cut into shavings, and reduced to powder in a mortar, after which they are made into pills. The horns are, for the greater part, brought from Cochin China, and some of them are covered with hair from the root to the point. In another shop we entered, we found the vender preparing birds' nests for sale, to be converted into soup for the epicurean purchaser. The qualities of the nests vary according to the situation and extent of the caves in which they are found, and the time at which they are taken. If procured before the eggs have been laid, the nests are of the best kind; if they contain eggs only, they are still valuable; but if the young are in the nests, or have left them, the whole are nearly worthless, being dark-coloured, streaked with blood, and intermixed with feathers and dirt. The nests are procurable twice every year. The best are found in deep damp caves. It was once thought that the caves near the sea-coast were the most productive; but some of the most profitable yet found, are situated fifty miles in the interior.* The sale of birds' nests is a monopoly

* I have already mentioned that the same description of nests are found in the caves near Kandy, in the interior of Ceylon.

with all the governments in whose dominions they are found. About 243,000 peculs, at a value of 1,263,570 dollars, are annually brought to Canton. We next visited the shop of a well-known confectioner, Sam-Shing, who prepares and sells to foreigners a large quantity of preserved ginger, and citron, as well as a variety of fruit and vegetable productions. He also sells soy, both of the kind made in China, and that which is brought from Japan. The latter is considered the best. There is a large manufactory of this article in the island of Honan, opposite Canton; and another at Whampoa.

Soy is made from the seeds (or beans) of the Dolichos Sooja, and the process of preparing it is as follows:—The beans are first boiled soft, when nearly an equal quantity of wheat or barley flour is added. After this has gone through a regular process of fermentation, a quantity of salt is put in, sufficient to make a brine strong enough to float an egg, using three times as much water as the original quantity of beans. This compound is then left for two or three months, when it is pressed, and strained for use. It improves by age, and is best preserved in earthen jars, and bottles, well sealed.

The last shop we went into was a shoemaker's, one of the most characteristic trades in China. Here I found the grotesque shaped shoe which we see in prints, and on the stage, realized in all their native extravagance. All the shoes have the curve

upwards at the point, but the shoes of men are generally pretty square in the front, while those intended for ladies all terminate in a sharp point. The main sole of the common shoe is generally very thick, and is composed either of wood or cork covered with a thin outer leather. The upper parts of the finer shoes are usually made of silk, either plain, or embossed with flowers.

The exclusiveness, or rather, perhaps, the carefulness of the Chinese is slightly evidenced in their habit of locking up the streets at night. At each end of every street there is a door which is always closed during the night, and the same custom is said to be strictly preserved within the walls of the city, where the shops, the people, and their manners and customs are considered to be exactly the same as in the suburbs: with this exception, that some of the streets within the walls are devoted entirely to distinct trades:—thus there is a street of shoemakers, another of cabinet-makers, another of lapidaries, and so on. It is said that there are no less than 25,000 shoemakers, 16,000 carpenters and cabinet-makers, and 7,000 lapidaries, in the city of Canton, but I will not undertake to verify the accuracy of the statement.

Wednesday, 20.—I visited Mr. Reeves, jun., today, accompanied by the Rev. Mr. Vachell and Mr. Copeland. Mr. Reeves is tea-taster to the British Factory, and we were invited to witness the process of examining the quality of the teas then about to be

purchased for the cargoes of the H. C. ships. We found a great crowd of idle Chinese about the doors of the British Factory, apparently much alarmed at the state of affairs, and not a little surprised to perceive the sedan chairs of all the Hong merchants ranged outside, while their owners were within the walls consulting with the gentlemen of the Committee. The cause of this unexpected array of the sedan chairs was that the Committee of the British Factory, since the Chinese authorities had forbidden all foreigners from using sedan chairs, resolved to prohibit the Hong merchants and Mandarins from entering the Factory in their chairs, as they had hitherto done, and had accordingly issued an order to that effect. The object of the visit of the whole body of the Cohong to-day was to make the Committee acquainted, *pro forma*, with the new edicts of the Viceroy. It is almost impossible to convey to the reader an accurate idea of the insulting character of these edicts by any means short of printing them in full; but the indecencies to which they bear reference, and the gross language in which they are clothed, would render such a course reprehensible. In one of these proclamations they charge the British and foreign merchants with the worst description of levity and vice, and found upon this fiction an excuse for depriving them of the use of native servants, which they strictly forbid the local authorities to permit them to hire. These groundless and wicked charges come with a very

ridiculous effect from a people who are absolutely steeped in every depravity, and who, in denouncing the supposed, or attributable crimes and faults of strangers, are in truth pronouncing the condemnation of their own. There is not a line of any of these braggart proclamations that, I believe, can be said in truth, even in their least offensive particulars, to lie against our countrymen residing in the neighbourhood of Canton; and on the other hand, there is scarcely a single immorality to which they point, of which the Chinese themselves are not guilty in its most odious forms.

One of the proclamations, announced to the Committee by the Cohong, commanded Mrs. Baynes to quit Canton immediately; and another desired the Committee, in imperative terms, to deliver up, within five days, three Parsee servants, who had been implicated in the murder of Capt. Mackenzie, of the Dutch ship, Vrow Helena, during an affray that took place in one of the houses of the Dutch Hong on the 30th September. These proclamations were accompanied with an impudent threat that, in case they were not complied with, the Viceroy would immediately send a military force to take possession of the British Factory. In consequence of this threat, the Committee, who had previously been obliged to employ a few British sailors to guard the entrance of the Factory, sent for a couple of 32 lb. carronades, a quantity of small arms, and a proportionate number of officers and seamen from

each of the H. C. ships. A regular guard was thus at once established for the protection of British life and property. I have always entertained but one opinion in reference to our connection with, and policy, towards the Chinese. We have treated them with too much forbearance. They have all the braggart, as well as all the recreant qualities of cowardice in their nature. If we were to make a decided demonstration of hostility, we should speedily obtain all that we require at their hands. A few British men of war would shatter the flimsy armaments of China with as much facility as our presence, even in slight numbers and without power, keeps their vagabond multitudes in check, in the suburbs of Canton.

Thursday, 21.—Soon after midnight several boats arrived from Whampoa, conveying the officers and men, with the carronades and ammunition requisite for the protection of the Factory, which were all landed very quietly. We had a large party of officers belonging to the H. C. ships at breakfast.

In the course of the morning, I called on the Chief of the Factory and his lady, and found them both on the point of leaving the house for the purpose of inspecting the defences that had been prepared to resist the Chinese authorities. The place began to assume something of the appearance of a fortification, for, besides the two carronades brought up from Whampoa, there were a few small brass guns that had been some time in the Factory, and up-

wards of an hundred seamen, who were all well provided with small arms. Mrs. Baynes, in thus accompanying her husband to view these warlike preparations, reminded me of Queen Elizabeth's visit to Tilbury Fort on the expected invasion by the Spanish Armada. May not a hero or heroine equally develope the character of their genius and their mental energies on a small, as well as an extended scale—in the midst of the sudden encampment in the woods, as well as in the sacked city? Mr. Baynes displayed on this occasion remarkable firmness and composure of mind: the situation in which he was placed was one of a very trying and responsible nature; and he met all its difficulties with the utmost calmness and courage.

The majority of the Chinamen who were immediately connected with the Factory, pretended to treat with ridicule the show of resistance which was so hastily prepared by our countrymen. They affected to laugh at the carronades, and, in that tone of insolence which they often use solely to conceal their fears, they exclaimed, "Chinamen very soon *chow-chow* (eat up) that two piece* large gun!"

* The word piece, as it is used by the Chinese, does not carry the meaning of cannon or any other species of fire-arms merely, but is conventionally applied in a loose and general sense. For instance, if you ask a Chinaman how many servants or children he has, he will answer, "so many piece." Another expression, caught up from the floating English of the suburbs, and used in reference to children, is curious:—thus, if a Chinaman have three boys and two girls, he will answer your enquiry with "he hap five piece chiloh,—three piece bull chiloh, and two piece cow chiloh."

But this air of defiance was considerably moderated on the part of the Hong merchants, who made another visit to-day of a much more pacific character than that of yesterday, for, instead of the heavy denunciations that might have been expected to follow our vigorous preparations to resist the injunctions of the authorities, the Hong merchants were commissioned to inform the Committee that the Viceroy did not mean to offer us any insult, or to do us any injury, that he was only a *little angry*, and never seriously contemplated the idea of carrying his threats into execution. The retraction of the Viceroy was solely to be attributed to our display of strength; and the whole affair completely illustrates the mixed daring and recreant character of these people. It will also help to shew, in a slight degree, the situation in which our countrymen are placed in the neighbourhood of Canton, and the constant grievances to which they are subjected. Such scenes are of frequent occurrence, and it only requires decisive measures to chastise the insolence of the natives, and secure tranquillity and safety to all the British and Foreign merchants.

The adjustment of the dispute produced a very pleasant gathering of the Company's officers at dinner, when the whole merits of the case were, of course, discussed in detail. The seamen who had been brought on shore to assist in the defence were entertained with proportionate hospitality, and, I have no doubt, found in the doings on land that

evening, an agreeable variation from the ordinary occupations on shipboard.

Friday, 22.—The weather had been oppressively warm for several days, in consequence of the wind being from the southward. The H. C. S. Marquis Camden, anchored just below the second bar, and Captain Larkyns came up to Canton in his own boat. He had lost his way on the previous evening through a thick fog, and, to avoid a still greater evil, was compelled to pass the night in a paddy field. At four o'clock in the afternoon, the Hong merchants paid another visit to the Factory, when, without exactly abandoning their demand, they were still milder in their language than before. In the evening Mr. and Mrs. Baynes took an airing on the river, in one of the Company's boats, and did not receive the least affront from any of the Chinese, who appeared to conduct themselves with more than ordinary circumspection.

Saturday, 23.—I left Canton this forenoon in one of the Canning's boats to visit my friends on board the Reliance, lying in Whampoa reach. About seven miles from Canton the shores of Whampoa island appear, and at this point stands a small fort known by the name of Howqua's Folly. The river is here divided into two main branches, both navigable, which unite again at the other extremity of the island, where the anchorage for foreign shipping is situated. Whampoa island, which lies, as I have described, in the very middle of the river,

is about four miles in length, and half a mile broad in the widest part. The town of Whampoa is on the south side, better than half-way down, and possesses a pagoda, a burial ground, and a custom-house for the examination of all boats passing up or down the river. The inhabitants are, for the most part, chiefly engaged in the shipping lying in Whampoa reach, and in a complete system of smuggling, for the prosecution of which their situation affords them ample facilities. The channel on the north side is called Junk river. From Canton to the anchorage at Whampoa reach is about twelve miles, and a good pulling boat generally accomplishes the voyage in two hours, with the tide in her favour. On our way down we passed the corpse of a dead man, which the ebbing tide had left exposed on the bank. Just as I arrived, the H. C. S. Ernaâd, in which I made a voyage from Madras to Calcutta, anchored at Whampoa, and I went on board to visit my friend Captain Corstorphine; I there met Colonel Edwards, who had been a fellow passenger with me in the same vessel in which he had now come from Calcutta. In the course of the afternoon I accompanied Mr. Grant, surgeon of the Reliance, to French Island, to join the funeral procession assembled at the interment of Mr. Shute, chief officer of the Dunira, which was very numerously attended, by officers, and seamen, from all the ships at Whampoa. The principal officers of foreign vessels, and passengers, or other persons who die

either at Whampoa, or Canton, are interred in this island; while the seamen and petty officers are buried in an adjoining one called Dane's Island.

On a second visit subsequently made to French Island, I had the curiosity to examine the tomb-stones. The oldest epitaph we could decypher bore the date of 1752, and commemorated the virtues of a Dutchman. Previous to which time it appears that foreigners had a burying ground between two and three miles from the Foreign Factories at Canton, on a hill near the high road leading to the interior. It was not inclosed, and was so encumbered with rubbish, that Osbeck says it was with difficulty he made out any of the inscriptions on the tomb-stones. Osbeck attended the funeral of a Dutch supercargo here in 1751, and in speaking of the widow, he says, she got admission into the suburbs of Canton with much difficulty, observing that the Chinese are very singular, looking upon foreign ladies as not much better than contraband goods. Thus it appears that, in former times, foreign ladies were not altogether excluded from Canton.

There were many tomb-stones of captains, and other officers of the H. C. ships, besides officers of King's regiments and the Indian army, who had visited China for their health, and consigned their bones to its soil:—and also of the Hon. Captain Gardiner, R. N., who died while in command of H. M. S. Dauntless, in the year 1820. On both of these small islands there are a few scattered villages,

the inhabitants of which are sometimes very annoying to foreigners who happen to walk about alone. In some instances they have ascended from insult to robbery, and have been known to steal watches and other valuables from the persons of strangers, besides treating them otherwise ill. In fact, the Chinese in the neighbourhood of Canton, as if they felt themselves in some measure warranted to do so by the tone and conduct of the ruling powers, never omit any safe opportunity of insulting or injuring foreigners.

It appears there are three descriptions of resurrection men in Canton, who carry on their depredations even at the very gates of the city:—first, those who open graves, and break the coffins of their foes; from motives of revenge; second, those who do so to strip the dead bodies of their ornaments; and third, those who carry off the dead to obtain a ransom. In Governor Loo's proclamation against this practice, he states the law to be as follows:—"to open a grave and see the coffin, to be punished by perpetual banishment. To open the coffin and see the corpse, death by strangulation. To carry off the body and demand a ransom, death by immediate decapitation, both for principals and accomplices."

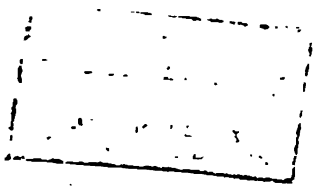
Sunday, 24.—About noon, the Hoppo,* or chief

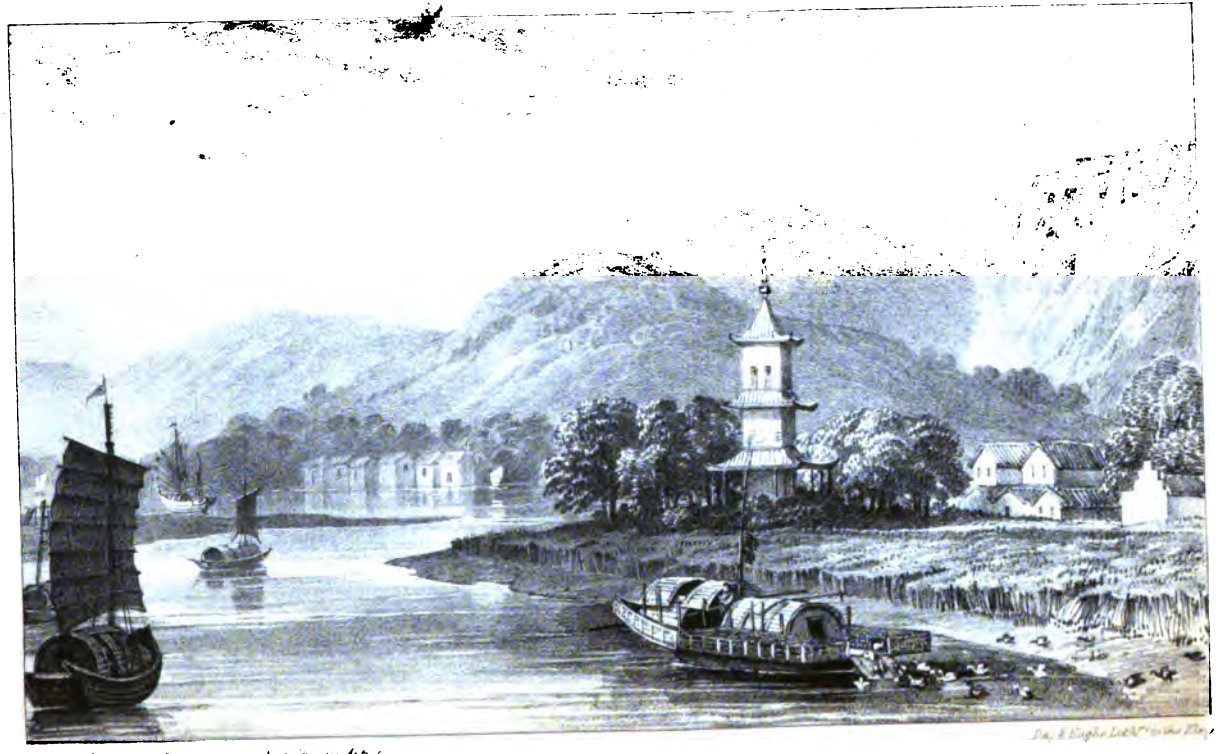
* The proper title of this officer is Hoy-Kwan, although he is commonly called Hoppo by foreigners. The name of the individual above alluded to was Eeu-lung, and his title Tai-yun, great man. The word Hoppo is derived from Hoo-poo, the Board of Reve-

custom-house officer, came down the river in great state, attended by a number of boats with flags flying, which, whenever they had occasion to pass near his boat, saluted him after the Chinese fashion, with the loud clashing and beating of gongs and drums. The object of this visit of the Hoppo to Whampoa, was to measure the H. C. ships, preparatory to the establishment of the scale of duty to be levied. This proceeding is repeated every season, although the same ships may have been previously measured twenty times over. It may be fairly conjectured, judging from the corrupt character of the Chinese authorities generally, that the repetition of so needless a ceremony is referable to the fees which, on these occasions, it is usual to give to the Hoppo. This grand functionary went on board the Duchess of Athol, where there was a cold collation prepared for his reception, satisfying his *official conscience* by sending his deputies on board the other ships. On all such occasions the Chinese mandarins exhibit their love of wine and beer, but especially of cherry brandy which they prefer to either.

There are two custom-house boats, called Hoppo boats, attached to every foreign vessel. The ostensible business of these boats is to examine every thing that is taken away, or brought on board the

nue at Pekin, and has been transferred to the person formerly commissioned by the Board. At present, the Hoy-Kwan is always appointed by the Emperor, and the office given to one of the slaves of the Imperial household.





ships, but they also serve the more congenial purpose of smuggling things on board, or from the vessel to the shore. There is a regular understanding between the custom-house officers and the smugglers to pay a certain sum for each venture, and the custom-house officers in their turn bribe the mandarin who is placed over them; so that a complete system of fraud exists from the highest to the lowest grades of the authorities, and extends in various shapes even to the Emperor himself, who participates largely in the evasions of the law, and of justice. Any thing can be purchased for money in China. Such is the cupidity and adroitnesss of the Chinese in the art, if I may so term it, of smuggling, that they will undertake to cheat the revenue at all times for a stipulated per centage; and I have been told that some of the country ships from India have been known to have had half their cargoes smuggled on board at Whampoa.

These custom-house officers generally keep their families living with them in their boats, which are always of a good size, and provided with a cabin for their accommodation. In the fore part they have a stock of small pigs, and keep ducks in baskets hung over each side of the boat near the stern. This latter usage is common amongst all the cargo boats that ply up and down the river. In order, however, to make sure of a constant supply, there are large boats from place to place, that are expressly employed in breeding and keeping ducks for the

use of the regular craft. These have large platforms, built of bamboo and covered with netting, that extend a considerable distance beyond the vessel at each side, and they are also fitted up with stoves, and places for hatching eggs. In the mornings the boats are generally hauled close in shore, near a paddy field, where the ducks are allowed to ramble about in search of provender; and such is the training to which they are accustomed, that on the whistle of their keeper they all run back to the boats as fast as they can, as if they were well aware that the last one would get a flogging, which is the invariable practice.

The exactions of the Hoppo, on occasions of his visits of measurement, he pretends to accept as mere changes of ceremony, by giving to each ship, in return for the money he receives, two small bullocks, seven bags of coarse flour, and eight gallons of sam-shew, a very fiery spirit, which is generally thrown overboard, to prevent the sailors from drinking it. These gifts of the Hoppo appear to have been an old custom of the country, adopted apparently with the intention of affording foreigners an opportunity of laying their petitions before him.

The following extract from a reply of the Canton government to a document sent out by the Hon. East India Company in 1761, complaining of their supercargoes not being allowed to state their grievances to the Hoppo, will explain this view of the usage alluded to.

"On examination, it appears, that every year, when the foreign ships enter the Port, the Hoppo ought, by law, to go in person to Whampoa, and superintend the measurement of the ships; and also that, according to regulation, he makes presents of cattle to the foreigners five or six times a year. At such times all the foreigners are present, and if they have any affair about which they require to present a petition, can embrace those opportunities for doing so. But, indeed, the Hoppo does not refuse permission to any foreign merchant to appear before him. Hereafter, should there be any really important case which cannot be deferred until an opportunity when the measurement takes place —it is permitted to the said foreigners to go themselves, in company with a surety merchant and linguist to the Hoppo's office, and there present their petition before him: nor are the officers in charge of the gates allowed, from selfish motives, to prevent their entrance."

As I am upon the subject of appeals from foreigners to the justice of the Chinese authorities, I cannot refuse a place to the following very novel and amusing illustration of the manner in which the Chinese government sometimes think fit to treat these matters. The circumstances to which it refers occurred in the year 1759. It appears that a Mr. Flint, belonging to the English Factory, was deputed to enquire into the facilities for carrying on the trading connexion with Ning-po,

and to proceed afterwards to Tëen-Tsin with an appeal to the Emperor, complaining of the conduct of the local government. In consequence of this, an imperial commissioner was appointed to inquire into the affair, and the result was that Lew-a-peen, a native who accompanied Mr. Flint, was sentenced to death, and Mr. Flint to three years imprisonment. The severity of this sentence produced a remonstrance from the Court of Directors, in which it was stated that Mr. Flint had acted under the orders of his own government, adding at the same time, a request that he might be liberated. The Chinese authorities insolently refused to grant the request, and, waiting until the term of three years had expired, transmitted the subjoined mandate to the King of England, before whom it was, probably, never laid. It bears date the 27th year of Këen-lung, (A. D. 1762.)

"Soo, Governor of Kwang-Tung and Kwang-Se; and MING acting Foo-Yuen of Canton, write this for the purpose of making a certain affair clearly known.

"It is substantiated that the Poo-Ching-Sze and Gan-cha-sze of Canton have presented the following statement:—'It appears that the foreign criminal Hung-jin-hwuy (the Chinese name assumed by Mr. Flint) is a foreign merchant of the English nation, who was formerly at Canton, going to and fro, for the purpose of trade. But Hung-jin-hwuy instead of keeping his station and observing the laws,

formed an illegal connexion with a treacherous native, named Lew-a-pëen, in the hopes of opening a port for trade at the city of Ning-po, in Ché-keang Province; and in the 24th year of Këen-Lung, advanced as far as the territory of Tëen-Tsin, to present to the Emperor an accusation against the Provincial Government of Canton, on various grounds. He was tried by an Imperial Commissioner, and clearly proved guilty; a report was returned to His Majesty; and he had to thank the Emperor for his grace and compassion to a distant foreigner, in that the treacherous native, Lew-a-pëen, alone was taken, executed, and his head exhibited to the people; while he was merely ordered to be kept in confinement at Macao for three years. Now reckoning from the 24th year of Këen-Lung, the 10th moon and 17th day (at which time he was delivered in custody to the Tung-Che of Macao, to be kept in confinement,) to the 17th day of the 9th moon of the current year, including one intercalary month, the term of three years is complete.

'Your Excellencies having beforehand presented a statement to His Majesty, requesting that Hung-jin-hwuy might be liberated and sent back to his own Country, have respectfully received His Majesty's gracious will declaring his consent. In obedience to which a person has already been sent to inform the officers civil and military of the said place, that, on the 17th day of the 9th moon, of the

current year, the said criminal Hung-jin-hwuy be liberated from his confinement, and delivered in custody to Pe-chew, the chief of the foreign Merchants belonging to the said nation, that he may keep him under restraint until such time as the first discharged ship of the said nation shall sail; and then cause that he be taken back to his country.

'It appears also on examination, that although Hung-jin-hwuy has excited disturbances and behaved in a wild improper manner; yet owing to the benevolence and compassion of the Celestial Empire, he has, fortunately for himself, merely been confined: and at the expiration of the appointed time has been graciously liberated; thus manifesting in the midst of the laws an immense and enlarged liberality of feeling, which comprehends every human being. For it is not the criminal Hung-jin-hwuy, *in particular*, who has received such amazingly gracious treatment, as that he should think of it with tears, and should rouse up all his grateful feelings—but likewise all the foreigners of the said nation have been so drenched with the waves of the Imperial favour, that they should leap for joy, and turn towards us for civilization!!

'Now it is reasonable that we should present this statement and request, that, when Hung-jin-hwuy is sent back to his own country, your Excellencies will transmit a document to the King of the said nation,—that he may, in obedience thereto, take Hung-jing-hwuy, and order him to be kept in safe

custody, and restrained, and on no account allowed again to enter into the interior of our country to excite disturbances, and offend against the laws,' and so forth.

"This statement having come before us, the Governor and Foo-Yuen, and being substantiated, we write the above circumstances, and make them known: and on this account we make it clearly known to the King of the said nation, that he forthwith, acting in obedience to this document, may take Hung-jin-hwuy, and order him to be kept in safe custody and restrained, and on no account allowed again to enter into the interior of our country, and excite disturbances; and that he may also command, that hereafter, all connected with the merchants who come to Canton to trade, shall, considering the depth of the benevolence and tenderness of the Celestial Empire towards distant foreigners, with redoubled reverence and respect, keep their stations, transact their business quietly, and in no manner excite disturbances or act irregularly, so as to be taken in the net of the national laws. Then all will be right. It is absolutely required that this reach him, for whose full information it is intended.

"The above is for the full information of the King of England."

But to return to the Hoppo, and the Custom-house system. Every bale of cotton that arrives at Canton, is weighed in the presence of persons deputed by the Chinese merchants, as well as the

officers of the ships, before it is delivered to those who have charge of the lighters intended to receive it. Some of the officers of the Reliance, while I remained at Whampoa, expressed a wish to have themselves weighed—[my readers will say that I journey, like the bee, from one thing to another, without much arrangement; but, they must remember, that, in my diary, I pursue the course of circumstances, rather than the continuity of subject]—and as they were all engaged in the amusement, it was suggested to me to ascertain my weight. It may not be uninteresting to travellers to know, that during twenty years, a period spent in almost constant activity, my weight never varied, one way or the other, more than a few pounds:—when I was weighed at Whampoa, I was ten stone six pounds, from which my weight has since but slightly fluctuated.

Monday, 25.—I accompanied Mr. Grant and Captain Stewart, of the Golconda, to-day, in a sail round French and Dane's Islands. My friends described the scenery to be very diversified and beautiful. This day the Committee, at the Factory, received from the Chinese authorities the final answer to their remonstrances, by which it appeared that, although those boasting rulers did not attempt to enforce their views, they still adhered to the pointless expression of their obstinate opinions.

Tuesday, 26.— I returned to Canton in the course of this evening, with Messrs. Compton and Grant,

in Captain Stewart's boat. On arriving at my quarters, I found a sick midshipman in my bed. I had no difficulty, however, in obtaining accommodation amongst so many friends, and was hospitably invited to the house of Mr. Fox.

Wednesday, 27.—I breakfasted at the Factory as usual, and met a large party of the Company's officers, who were still employed there in mounting guard. The Chinese were relaxing in their authoritative tone, having, doubtless, felt the ill effects of the dispute, though they were too haughty to offer anything in the shape of conciliation. The weather was very warm this morning, with the wind from the southward, which occasionally occurs at this season of the year, until the north-east monsoon has set in; but, in the afternoon, it changed to the northward in a heavy squall, which made the atmosphere considerably colder. About an hour before midnight, while at the house of Mr. Jardine, I heard the fire-gongs beating in various directions, and some gentlemen who were present, having repaired to the top of the house, perceived a great blaze arising from the city. The fire-engines were immediately despatched from the Factories, and, on the following morning, we were informed, that the loss was confined to three houses, which were burnt to the ground. The Chinese have an excellent watch in the suburbs of Canton, the watchmen keeping each other on the alert by constantly striking two pieces of bamboo together; this signal they are

obliged to pass from one to the other in succession.

Thursday, 28.—There are, at present, in this port, a number of fine ships, which are constant traders between Bombay and Canton, making but one voyage in the year, availing themselves of the s. w. monsoon up the China sea, and returning with the N. E.

Since the opening of the trade in 1814, the country service may be said to have been on the decline, and more confined to the ports eastward of the Cape of Good Hope; in consequence of which, many of the largest of the Bengal ships have found their way into the free trade; however, the vessels performing annual voyages from Bombay to China, are still some of the finest private merchant ships in the world; and although this part of the country trade has fallen off, their Parsee owners continue to be pretty successful in their spirited speculations. The commanders and officers of the Bombay ships, are principally men who have served in the Navy, or Hon. E. I. Company's service. The advantages of their situation are not so great as formerly; yet they are better paid than in the home trade. The Bombay ships, which are generally from 500 to 1200 tons burden, are principally employed in the conveyance of cotton to China.

The vessels from Bengal are much smaller, running from 100 to 500 tons, from which cause, their voyages are more frequent and various. They are

also better adapted for the trade of the Indian Archipelago.

A new class of vessels have lately sprung up in Calcutta, which are built with great attention to fast sailing, (commonly called opium-runners) and are employed for conveying the first sales of the opium to Canton, against the N. E. monsoon in the China sea, by which they avoid the delay, and other evil consequences, by the circuitous route of an eastern passage to China. This improvement in naval architecture has reduced the voyage, to and from China, against the strength of the monsoon, to a common occurrence, which was formerly seldom attempted even by vessels of war. For this great benefit to commerce we are mainly indebted to the talent and zealous exertions of Mr. Seppings, the builder, and surveyor of the Hon. E. I. Company at Bengal, and in his happy endeavours to perfect these vessels, he has had recourse to the plans and models of the ships in our navy, as well as the French and American privateers, most distinguished for fast sailing.

Captain Clifton, of the Red Rover, who has been a midshipman in the navy, had the merit of being the first who undertook the voyages against the monsoon.

There was but a small party at breakfast this morning at the Factory, a separate mess being provided for the officers on duty. The guard was still at the British Factory, but the sensation which

its introduction created, is gradually subsiding, and the crowds are much less troublesome than at first, when they armed themselves with stones to resist the rattans of the police. I paid Mr. Dunn another visit to-day, and examined, with him, some interesting models of Chinese temples, bridges, and boats.

Friday, 29.—Captain Blair, of the H. C. S. Fairlie, brought his Lady up from Whampoa to visit Canton. An English Lady visiting Canton, is the object of as much curiosity and attention as is excited by the visit of a member the Royal Family in England to a country town. About noon I accompanied a party of friends to the Fah-tee Gardens, which lie about two miles and a half above the foreign factories, on the opposite side of the river. Foreigners were formerly permitted to visit them every day; a misunderstanding having arisen, however, between some captains and the mandarins, the latter induced the government to restrict the time for their inspection, to those days of the moon in which the figures 3 or 8 occur, namely, the 3d, 8th, 13th, 18th, 23d, 28th. These days being appointed for the natives to present petitions, the mandarins and their clerks are confined to their abodes, and there is consequently less danger of a collision between foreigners and the natives. In these gardens there was a very extensive collection of plants and dwarf fruit trees in full bearing. They were placed in pots of various fantastic shapes,

some representing elephants and buffaloes. There was a small well-stocked fish-pond, but the water of it was exceedingly dirty, a state which the Chinese would be more likely to increase than alter.

All the Chinese who are in the habit of transacting business with foreigners speak a kind of English jargon, which is sufficiently intelligible for ordinary intercourse, and from which they do not appear to have any wish to depart for the cultivation of a better acquaintance with our language. Young men and boys coming to Canton for employment as servants or otherwise, are previously taught by the older natives, so that the jargon is regularly transmitted from generation to generation.

Sunday, 31.—Having accompanied Captains Morgan, Yates, and Neish, yesterday to Whampoa, on a visit to their respective ships, I breakfasted with the last mentioned gentleman this morning on board the Fort William, and attended Divine service afterwards on board the American ship Panama. It was performed by the Rev. Mr. Abeele, an American missionary of the Presbyterian persuasion. There were but five American vessels at this time in the port, whereas in 1821 there were no less than forty. This was a striking evidence of the decrease of the trade with America. We visited the Sesostris and Sir Charles Malcolm; the latter was a very fine ship, built at Bombay, but of such peculiar formation, resembling two tea-chests placed close to each other, that however she might

answer with the monsoon in her favour, could certainly never manage to beat to windward against it. All our party that left Canton together dined with Captain Morgan of the Pascoe. In the evening I visited my friends in the Reliance, and took a sail in the long-boat of the Fort William, cutter-rigged, of twenty-one tons burden. She was intended more as a pleasure, than a cargo, boat. Most of the country ships are similarly provided, their boats being manned by Lascars, and having every necessary accommodation for wet or warm weather. These are the only boats that foreign vessels send to Canton, the European sailors being too much inclined to get drunk, and enter into quarrels with the Chinese; whilst the Lascars, from religious scruples are more obedient and sober, though not quite unaddicted to the vice of drunkenness. The Lascars are also the only foreign seamen that are allowed to visit Canton for their pleasure, which is for the avowed object of making purchases with the two months' wages that are always paid them in China. This they usually spend in party-coloured umbrellas, coarse china-ware, sweetmeats, &c. which they dispose of to great advantage on their return to India.

The dispute with the Chinese has subsided it seems for the present, in consequence of an intimation from the Governor of Canton to the gentlemen of the Factory, that if they would send the sailors back to their ships, no further molestation should

be offered; and when he received His Imperial Majesty's instructions, he would immediately make them acquainted with the result. It was therefore hoped that foreign ladies would be allowed the privilege of visiting Canton with their husbands, notwithstanding the occasional fulminating edicts to the contrary.

Monday, November 1.—After breakfast I returned to Canton with Captain Neish, the Rev. Mr. Abeele, and Mr. Rayne. I found every thing going on as formerly, the guns as well as the seamen, having been sent back to the ships at Whampoa. I accompanied Captain Morgan to the wharf, where the Chinese vessel was taking on board his Chow-chow Chop. The word Chow-chow signifies "eating," and the term Chow-chow Chop is consequently applied to the last chop-boat that is loaded for any ship, and which is supposed to carry all the private stores for the captain, officers, and crew. The cargo of this chop is allowed to pass without duty, or rather the export duties are paid by the security merchants. When these things are on board, the readiness of the ship for sailing is implied, as in the saying of "the long-boat is in." When vessels are preparing for sea, the Comprador takes care to have a requisite supply of stock ready at the appointed time. These people have a complete monopoly in this way, for they will not allow any one to sell provisions to foreigners; nor can you even purchase stock at Canton without paying a duty for

its embarkation. The consequence of this monopoly is obvious, the rate of charge being regulated at the will of the exacting vendors, is of course higher than it would be if the markets were thrown open to competition. Nor are the Compradors satisfied with their high prices: they resort to every imaginable device for cheating their customers; requiring, in the first place, to be made acquainted with the day when the live stock is to be sent on board, and then, as every animal is purchased by weight, they take care to overfeed them for several days previously, so as to give them an artificial gravity. Some of the experienced captains, being fully aware of this trick, keep the animals on board a day or two without food, before they will permit them to be weighed.

Tuesday, 2.—I visited some Chinese shops, and went to one in which there were several beautiful ornamental articles of various descriptions; among the rest, mandarins and other figures cut out of roots of bamboo, and beautifully lackered; tea-trays; card-boxes; writing-desks; and ladies' work-boxes. Indeed the skill of the Chinese in these fancy manufactures, is too well known to require any comment. I purchased several drawings on rice paper, and employed the artist in copying some which I had brought with me from England. The material called rice paper is not an artificial, but a natural production, being a plant belonging to the order of Malvaceæ. It is the same as the Solah of

Bengal, which is an Æschynomene. The process of forming it into sheets is similar to that of cutting cork.

One of the Hong merchants' chop-boats was stopped yesterday by the Hoppo, on her way to a ship at Whampoa with a cargo of tea; not for the evasion of duties, but for the purpose of "squeezing," as it is termed, 10,000 dollars out of the merchant. The Hoppo, it appears, is in the habit of making similar iniquitous demands, under the plea of its being intended as a present for the Emperor, while it is well known to be destined for his own use. When he has any difficulty in gaining his point, he sends for the Hong merchants day after day, and keeping them in his office from morning till night without any refreshment, at last obliges them to acquiesce. As they are compelled to go on their knees when he addresses them, it is said that he at one time took the opportunity of keeping several of them in that position for six hours, in consequence of which they have since invariably taken care to provide themselves with *kneepads*, which they fix on under their trowsers, on the occasion of their attendance. In the case just mentioned a representation was made to the gentlemen of the Factory, and the Committee ordered the cessation of their trade with the Hongs, as the best means of resisting the imposition. The stoppage caused a murmur and discussion among the people, which soon obliged the Hoppo to desist from his demand,

and the chop was accordingly permitted to proceed on the Thursday following.

Wednesday, 3.—A report was prevalent to-day, among the Chinese, that an order had been issued by the Governor for 3000 troops to march into the province, westward of Canton, for the purpose of quelling an insurrection which had recently broken out. It was said to have arisen from the imposition, by the Chief Magistrate of that district, of an additional tax upon rice. On the remonstrance of the people, he caused three of them to be decapitated as rebels; upon which the son of one of the sufferers became the leader of the insurgents, who increased so rapidly, and were so determined on obtaining redress, that the whole province became alarmed for its safety.

Thursday, 4.—Mr. and Mrs. Thornhill arrived at the Factory this morning from Macao, without having experienced any interruption or insult on their way. I attended a Chinese theatrical performance, which is called in Chinese-English, *Sing-Song*. Their pieces are said to be historical, and embrace long stories of love and jealousy; in which, however, the cultivation of moral or intellectual feelings is never desired; but, on the contrary, every species of indecency is introduced, to the great delight of the native audience. Notwithstanding the nature of their performances, the stage is usually erected opposite a house of religious worship, which, by a strange perversion of reason, they consider a compliment to their gods.

Friday, 5.—I accompanied Professor Neumann to-day in a visit to a large monastery, on the opposite side of the river, commonly called the Honan Joss-house. There are nearly 100 Budha Priests in this monastery, who are under vows of celibacy, and live solely on vegetable diet. They were very polite in shewing us over the building, and, after offering us refreshments, favoured us with a sight of their sacred hogs. These animals, about twelve in number, are treated, from a devotional feeling, with the best fare that can be obtained; they are never killed, and frequently live to the age of threescore and ten. When death removes one of them, its place is immediately filled by another, as the monks are desirous of having it believed that they are immortal. This monastery* was used as the residence of Lord Amherst, during his embassy. On leaving the monastery, we dined with Captain Innes, the Commodore of the Hon. Company's ships for the season.

Saturday, 6.—I attended the sale by auction of

* Since my visit, the Temple has been partly destroyed by fire: of which I find the following description in the Chinese Repository for March, 1834.—"A fire in the Temple of Honan, nearly opposite to the foreign Factories, was discovered early in the evening of the 4th inst., and before ten o'clock, the *Choo-teen ko*, a large hall filled with idols, was reduced to ashes. The fire was communicated from a lamp which hung near one of the shrines. When the flames first broke out, considerable concern was felt for the other parts of the Temple, and for the house of the senior Hong merchant, which stood near the Choo-teen ko."

the effects of the late Mr. Shute, chief officer of the Dunira, which took place at Markwick and Lane's Europe warehouse, Imperial Hong. The former of these persons keeps an hotel opposite the warehouse; it is the first house of the kind in Canton, and had been much wanted, in consequence of the number of strangers constantly arriving from India and other places.

Sunday, 7.—The Rev. Mr. Vachell performed Divine service at the Factory chapel, which was well attended. Mr. Low, an American merchant, residing at Canton, brought Mrs. and Miss Low from Macao to-day, in a fine decked boat, named the Sylph. In a private boat you are not subject to be stopped and examined by the Custom-house officers on the banks of the river, or by the Mandarin boats; nor would any Chinese boat have dared to convey a foreign lady up the river, as was done in the present instance with impunity.

Wednesday, 10.—I accompanied a party of gentlemen, yesterday, to Whampoa, to attend a survey of some of the Hon. Company's ships, previous to their taking in cargo: and to-day we had a grand rowing match, between the best boats of the several ships at anchor here. It appeared to afford great gratification to the officers and crews of the respective ships, as also a number of persons who had come from Canton on purpose to witness it. It commenced at eleven o'clock, and terminated about three in the afternoon.

Thursday, 11.—The boat-racing matches were renewed to-day, beginning at the same hour as yesterday, and terminating at half-past five. As the life-boats were rowed with their plugs out, the water was up to the thwarts, which made it very cold work for the poor fellows who had to pull. We returned to Canton this evening in a "chop," and reached the Factory at midnight, having been favoured with a visit from the Custom-house officers on our way.

Monday, 15.—Mr. M'Vicar invited me to accompany him to the house of a Chinese, with whom a party of his English friends were about to dine. We repaired to the Chinaman's abode at half-past five, in the expectation of a repast in the Chinese style, but were much disappointed on finding it almost wholly composed of English dishes.

Wednesday, 17.—The first of the H. C. ships for the season, the Dunira, Thomas Coutts, William Fairlie, and Duchess of Athol, were despatched on this day (as usual) for England. The Ex-Governor of Penang and his family, were to join the Thomas Coutts, at North Island, in the Straits of Sunda. On leaving the river, a gun, unshotted, was fired at each of these ships by one of the forts at the Bogue, and having returned the compliment, they proceeded on their voyage without any further interruption. This salute was given in consequence of three of them having sailed without their grand chop, or port clearance, which

omission they attributed to the neglect of the security merchant, and some delay on the part of the Chinese authorities. The pilot on board the Duchess of Athol, was so afraid of the consequences of his taking a ship out under such circumstances, that he jumped overboard from the poop, on hearing the first gun, trusting to the chance of being picked up by some passing boat.

I left Canton this evening with Captain Yates, for Whampoa. The night became so dark and cloudy, that we ran on a shoal off Whampoa Island, a little below Howqua's Fort, and remained a-ground for a considerable time: on getting off, we were soon obliged to anchor in consequence of the flood-tide setting against us; but, about three o'clock on Thursday morning, we were able to proceed, and reached the Sesostris at six. Having visited some of the H. C. ships, I returned with Captain Yates to Canton. Two Chinese received a castigation on the parade this evening; one at the hands of Captain Neish, whom he had insulted; and the other, from an officer in the Company's service, at whom he had thrown a stone. The latter offender was dragged by his tail to the Chinese police-office, where he was additionally punished, by order of the Mandarin.

Friday, 19.—The Mandarins were informed this morning, as usual, that the Company's bales of woollens were ready for their inspection; but they refused to attend, unless permitted to enter the Fac-

tory in their sedan-chairs. This refusal was met by a declaration, that, if they did not think proper to come, a party of seamen would be ordered to carry the goods into the store without examination; they had consequently no alternative but to attend, and with more than their accustomed gravity caused the goods to be passed. Mr. Copeland and myself accompanied Mr. Reeves and his son to-day, to dine, *à la mode Chinois*, with one of the Hong merchants, named Tin-qua; whom we found, on our arrival, ready with two of his Chinese friends to receive us. On dinner being announced, we were conducted to a circular table, and each of us provided with a pair of ivory chopsticks mounted with silver, a silver ladle with the handle much curved, a small cup of soy, a saucer or stand for the bowls out of which we were to eat, and an elegant silver cup richly gilt, with two handles, mounted on a stand of similar material, and resembling in form an inverted saucer. This cup was used for drinking Suey-sung, the wine of the country, and did not contain more than the old-fashioned Chinese tea-cup; but after drinking the health of one of the party it was usual to turn the inside of the cup towards him to shew that it was empty. The wine was presented to us boiling hot, and our cups replenished at every remove. In addition to the above, each European was supplied with a knife and fork and some bread. The table was laid out with eight small dishes containing articles to whet

the appetite, such as cold dried pork, called chin-chew, grated so fine that it resembled red-coloured wool; small chips of dried salt fish and ham; roast chicken, cut into small pieces shaped like dice; pig's tongue; salt fish, torn into shreds like flax; legs of ducks, cured in the same manner as hams; and a salad, composed of greens, onions, garlic, salt fish, and eggs, mixed up with tea-oil. These delicacies were cold, remaining on the table throughout the entertainment, and were paid uncommon attention to by the Chinese, at every opportunity afforded them by the removal of the bowls. The dinner commenced with a large bowl of birds'-nest soup, from which each person helped himself. We found it very insipid until flavoured with soy, as the necessary condiments of salt and pepper seem to be wholly neglected in Chinese cookery. The second dish was shark's-fin soup with balls of crab, followed by divers others, among which was a vegetable soup made of prepared sea-weed from the coast of Japan. This weed, which is called Tay-choey, resembles in its dried state the pith found in the hollow of a quill, but in the soup its taste is similar to that of celery; there were also in this soup slices of young bamboo, and roots of the white and water lily, each having a peculiar and agreeable flavour. After the soups, came stewed mutton, cut as fine and tender as vermicelli, the gravy delicious. This was followed by roasted pigeons' eggs in a very rich gravy; we found it no easy matter, however, to

transfer these eggs from the bowl to our cups by means of the chop-sticks. The Chinese do not clean or change their chop-sticks during the dinner, but each thrusts his own into every dish and helps himself throughout the repast. They also consider it excessively polite to help a foreigner with their chop-sticks, after having eaten with them themselves from various dishes. Next came roasted pork, the skin of which was served up by itself as a peculiar delicacy, having been fried brown in fat, and cut into squares. Roast capons followed, and were found exceedingly tender, having been fed on ground rice. Stewed teal was then served, followed by stewed pigeons, mushrooms, ducks' feet, and a numberless variety of dishes, of the names of many of which we were, of course, ignorant. At the conclusion a large bowl of rice was served up, as hot as possible, with sundry square pieces of salt fish to give it a relish. To eat a bowl or two of this rice at the "wind up" of a hearty dinner is considered by the Chinese as a sign of a good constitution, (one thing is pretty clear, that it is a proof of a strong and capacious stomach), and our friends attacked it accordingly. We had neither butter nor cheese on the table, as the natives do not milk their cows in the neighbourhood of Canton, and foreigners are therefore obliged to provide themselves with cows for their own purposes. Our host adopted the English custom and set the example of drinking wine with each other; while we, at the

same time, followed the Chinese mode of salutation, repeating the word chin-chin, and inclining the cup towards the person whose health we drank, to shew that we had emptied its contents.

> Wine fills the veins, and healths are understood
> To give our friends a title to our blood.—WALLER.

This wine is extracted from rice, and though by no means strong, has rather a pleasant flavour. They drink it exceedingly hot, with the idea that it is an *appetizer* and assists digestion. It seems to be used on the same principle as the warm liquor of the Roman epicures, which enabled them to continue at supper all night long. We had a desert of preserved and dried fruits, followed by tea; after which we took our leave.*

On our way to the Factory we observed a bamboo

* The Chinese shopkeepers usually take two meals a day: the first between eight and ten o'clock in the morning, and the second between four and six o'clock in the afternoon. Their ordinary diet is composed of rice in large quantities; pork or fish (with much sauce) in small quantities; and vegetables *ad libitum*; while their beverage is warm tea without milk or sugar, and sometimes a dram of sam-shew. Their shops are always shut about sunset, when they retire from business, but not to enjoy repose, as they then betake themselves to gambling, smoking, and other debauched habits; they even gamble for what fruit and sweetmeats they desire to have from the stalls in the streets. In the banquets of the rich (called in the Chinese phraseology, "Drinking") they have hens and ducks' eggs dyed red, also ginger steeped in a sour liquid; and each guest takes home with him three or four red eggs and a bit of the ginger.

shed which had just been erected by the river, near the place of embarkation at the end of Hog Lane, in which were deposited, till morning, the mortal remains of a Mandarin, who had died about eight months previous. His friends had waited for what they considered a lucky period for interment, and which, it seems, was now arrived. The hut was erected, not with a view to protect the coffin from exposure to the weather, but in order to propitiate their imaginary deity for a prosperous voyage, as the remains of the magistrate were to be conveyed to his native place. A Mandarin's flag had been procured for the boat, and, as it was thereby secured from examination, it was, doubtless, made the medium of smuggling opium to a considerable extent.

Sunday, 21.—I paid another visit to Whampoa to-day with Captain Yates, and found that the Fort William had dropped down below the rest of the shipping in preparation for sailing on the following day for Bombay. She had taken on board 2000 chests of tea for the Merope, Capt. Parkyns, lying at Lintin, and bound to New South Wales. By shipping her cargo outside the Bogue, she avoided the heavy duties to which all vessels render themselves liable that enter the river, though ships are permitted to take on board what they please for others outside, not only without subjecting themselves to the exaction of duty, but gaining a small freightage for the trouble of the transport.

All boats and persons employed by the shipping at Whampoa are taxed by the custom-house officer who attends each ship, even to the poor woman who washes the sailors' clothes; and the officer in turn passes a fee to the Mandarin for his privilege, so that the "squeezing" system prevails through all ranks from the highest to the lowest.

Women are constantly employed in small boats, in which they live with their families; and to prevent accidental drowning they attach a gourd, or a piece of hollow bamboo stopped up at each end, to the backs of the younger children, to serve as a float. These women are exceedingly awkward in their gait, which is caused by the position in which they sit while rowing. As they are all women of licentious habits, they are designated by the Chinese *Soui Qui*, "convenient water-fowl."

Foreign vessels trading to China generally take the opportunity of painting and gilding while they are in the river, in consequence of the economy and elegance with which such ornamental work is executed. The mode adopted is to form a contract with a Chinese for painting the whole ship, inside and out, which includes every article belonging to the vessel, namely, casks, buckets, tables, chairs, seamen's chests, &c. The price is regulated according to the size of the ship and the colour of the paint, but the Chinese contractor is obliged to pay a tax of 30 dollars to the Mandarin, before he is permitted to come on board.

Captain Yates and myself left Whampoa on our way back to Canton; about three o'clock we passed a junk going up the river, that had just arrived, and was saluted by all the other junks in the river by beating gongs, a compliment which she returned. As sunset was approaching we observed a person employed on board every vessel and boat, in burning coloured or gilt paper which he held in his hands, bowing at the same time towards the setting sun, and beating a gong. All Chinese vessels have what is termed a joss-house on board, in proportion to the size of the vessel. In these they place wooden images richly gilt, and joss-sticks which they keep continually burning. But in boats they have only a small glass-fronted case, filled with highly-gilded flowers with Chinese characters pasted on the back of them, and one or more joss-sticks, composed of cow-dung and sandal wood likewise in a state of ignition.

Tuesday, 23.—Having paid a visit to Mr. Dunn, I had the gratification of examining two handsome models of Chinese summer-houses, built in the pagoda style, one of them being nearly square, with only a ground floor, while in the other there was a second story, highly ornamented with figures on the roof. He was kind enough to present me at the same time with a shirt of bamboo* net-work, the

* The cultivation of bamboo is perhaps more attended to, and applied to more useful purposes in China, than in any other part of the world. There are a great many varieties of the plant, and some

novelty and utility of which I happened to admire. These shirts are worn in summer next the skin for the sake of coolness, and also to keep their silk dresses from being soiled by the heat of the body.

There is a small market near the Factories, at the bottom of Old China street, where vegetables and fruit are exposed for sale, and, to the astonishment

of them differ considerably in height, dimensions, substance, colour, and quality. The black are the rarest and most esteemed, but the process required for producing this colour, is said to be known only to the Chinese.

This plant is applied to so many uses in China, that perhaps the shortest way would be to state, what it is not used for: however, it may be interesting to name a few of the purposes to which it is most commonly applied; in the first place, the leaves are used for covering small houses, making jackets, hats, umbrellas, lining tea-chests, stuffing beds and pillows, and for fodder when green.

The diameter of the stem and its height vary considerably. The usual height is about 40 or 50 feet, but they are occasionally to be met with between 60 and 70 feet, and they run from 1 to 8 inches in diameter. The distances between the joints of some kinds are from 4 to 6 inches, while in others they are from 4 to 5 feet apart. It is said to succeed best in a sandy soil, on the banks of rivers, and in new drained marshes, where the roots can easily penetrate. It is always propagated by suckers, for it seldom blows, and still more rarely perfects it seeds. It requires between 4 and 5 years, before a plantation arrives at the most desirable stage for cutting. The stem is used in building of houses, making boats, canes, rods of correction in police offices and schools; and after undergoing the process of maceration, hats, paper, &c. &c.

The roots of this plant are carved into various forms, and grotesque images. The young shoots are much used as a vegetable, a pickle, a preserve, and as a medicine.

of Europeans, there is a constant supply of dogs and cats intended for the table; they are brought in baskets alive and sold by weight. The dogs are generally young puppies, but the cats are of various ages. Rats and frogs are also commonly sold for eating, and even dead rats thrown overboard from ships at Whampoa, are picked up by the natives and cooked. The above mentioned animals are also hawked about the streets of Canton in baskets for sale.

The Ann and Amelia arrived this evening from England, with Messrs. Majoribanks and Davis as passengers; the former coming out as President, and the latter as a member of the Select Committee. The gentlemen whom they superseded, left their posts with general respect and regret; indeed, it was a matter of astonishment that they were displaced, after the energy and ability with which they had supported the cause of their countrymen against the insults and imposition of the Chinese. It is, however, very satisfactory to add, that the important interests entrusted to Messrs. Majoribanks and Davis, could not have been confided to abler hands.

Wednesday, 24.—Another English lady, Mrs. Whiteman, arrived to-day from Macao, with as little interruption as attended the landing of any of the ladies who preceded her, having merely to encounter a gazing crowd of idle Chinese. About the usual time of promenade, there was a race on the river between two English wherries, one a six-

oared boat, belonging to Captain Madden, but pulling only four, and the other a four-oared boat, the property of Captain Larkyns. The latter won the race, as might be supposed from the above circumstance. Messrs. Hudlestone, Astell, and Clarke set off for Macao this evening, in the Sylph, free-passage-boat, taking with them a license for four persons, to come from Macao to Canton, in a Chinese boat, no person being allowed to pass in a Chinese boat, without such a license. This was intended for the new Chief of the British Factory and three of his friends, and was obtained in four and twenty hours after application, though the usual time consumed in procuring this document is frequently more than double that period.

Monday, 29.—Mr. Davis arrived from Macao this morning, accompanid by Dr. Morrison and Mr. Dalrymple. The British merchants of Canton presented a very gratifying address to the Ex-Members of the Committee, whose deposition has caused, it would seem, very general regret.

Wednesday, *December* 1.—Mr. and Mrs. Baynes embarked with their family, yesterday, for Macao, and to-day, the H. C. S. Edinburgh, sailed for England. Despatches also were forwarded to the Macqueen, lying at the second bar, preparatory to sailing. Dined at Mr. Fox's, where I met Captain Parkyns, who had arrived from Lintin, to make final arrangements for his voyage to New South Wales.

Saturday, 4.—Since Mrs. Whiteman's arrival in Canton, Mr. W. has been frequently visited by the Hong merchants, who have used every endeavour to persuade or compel him to take his lady back to Macao. Finding their entreaties of no avail, they have annoyed him by impeding his trade, and causing his Chinese servants to leave him. Mr. Whiteman informed the Hong merchants, that when Mrs. Thornhill, the only lady remaining in the British Factory, left Canton, Mrs. Whiteman should follow her example, to which they replied, "that he was only a little merchant, while the British Factory was a great body;" this reply was in unison with the general tenor of Chinese official proceedings, in which the power of resistance was looked to, rather than the justice of the measure.

We have had, for several days past, a constant rattling of money in the Hongs, arising, I understand, from weighing and examining dollars received from the Chinese, to be sent to England in the H. C. ships. As each of the shopkeepers has a private mark, or Chinese character, which he stamps on the coin, the accumulation is so great as to render the original die quite illegible, so that the Hongs are, in general, obliged to resort to weight as the only means of ascertaining the value. There is, at present, it seems, a considerable drain of specie from China, for which several causes are assigned. It is principally attributed to the opium trade, which is invariably carried on in specie,

to the amount of several millions annually. It is also constantly forwarded to England by the agents for European houses, and Native Indians, and there has been, at the same time, a considerable decrease in its importation into China. The American vessels were accustomed to bring with them dollars, for which however, British manufactures, woollens and cottons, are now substituted.

Information was received on Saturday, that the Imperial Government required 1,000,000 of taels from the Canton treasury, for the purpose of raising an army to suppress a rebellion that had just broken out.

It is a common thing in the streets of Canton to see a red lacquered stand, over which at times a large umbrella is placed, where the lower orders assemble to undergo the necessary operation of shaving. Here they may also have their hair dressed, trimmed, and plaited, their eyes and ears cleaned, their bodies shampooed, and even their toe nails duly attended to. Strangers may be waited on at their lodgings, when they require the services of these barbers, of whom there are seven thousand in the city of Canton. Quack doctors also have stands in the streets, where they exhibit a variety of plaisters, herbs, and puffing paragraphs.

There are a great number of regular practitioners in Canton, amounting, it is supposed, to nearly two thousand, but the fashionable one is Chin-she-tih, a man upwards of sixty years of age. He rose in his

profession from a state of poverty, a mere hawker of drugs, but at present he is said to be possessed of a million of the currency of the land (taels). Still he preserves his old simple habits. His house is situated near the Tartar General's, in the old city; early in the morning it is open for patients, who, as they come in, are conducted to a room adjoining the Doctor's, where they wait for him in silence. Patients who wish him to call at their houses, enter their names and places of abode, with his doorkeeper. About nine o'clock he sallies forth, committing himself entirely to his faithful servant, and chair-bearers, who carry him round to the patients in the order of time as reported at his gate. Those whose names are first entered are if possible first served, without reference to their rank or condition. He makes no charges: his patients may give a fee or not, as they please. He receives no money with his own hand. People's tangible thanks are given to his servant.

Chin, whose name means "*Sink*," is a man of few words; and these few uttered in the dialect of the Whampoa district. He speaks the mandarin as a broad Scotchman speaks English. He either cannot, or will not, satisfy any person about the power of the drugs he administers;—which, by the way, it is said, are very few. He rings the changes on about twenty-four descriptions of medicine, being rather a cautious practitioner. He is the opposite of the *Rhubarb Doctor*, who long

held the reins of medical sovereignty in Canton, for Dr. Sink never administers rhubarb at all. Still he has become very popular among the rich natives, and in all the public offices. They say that although he does not speak good mandarin, and is not able to explain the properties of his prescriptions, yet people very generally get well under his care, and therefore he has risen to his present influence and affluence.

It has been said of him, that he first obtained notoriety by pretending to cure leprosy. This reputation he sustained by first occasioning, when called to visit patients, a false species of leprosy, which he afterwards found no difficulty in curing.

It appears by the Chinese Repository, that early in 1833, some pirates, knowing the circumstance of the Doctor's wealth, and what was much for their purpose also, his great greediness of gain, formed a plan to carry him off. Two of their number, dressed like the attendants of a naval officer, were deputed to repair to Canton, and with a box of silver, amounting to one hundred taels, to wait on the old gentleman, to present him with the money, and to solicit him in the most importunate manner to visit their master in distress on board his junk, which they said was anchored a few miles below the city. Flattered and cheered by the money, Dr. Chin was soon seated in their boat, and did not learn the secret until he was without the Bogue, when he was seen, by persons on board other boats,

weeping bitterly, and begging to be allowed to return. In this situation terms of release were proposed; he might write to his friends in Canton; and if, in a specified time and manner, they would pay *two thousand taels*, he should be released; otherwise he should be cut in quarters, and *sunk* in the sea. The proposals were accepted, and the Doctor, after the money was received, returned unhurt to his family.

Thursday, 9.—I accompanied Mr. Dent yesterday in his wherry, when I gave him my assistance in rowing, performing that office much to his astonishment, paticularly in the vicinity of Canton, where the tide is strong and the river crowded with a multitude of boats,* barges, &c. &c. This being considered by the gentlemen of the Factory as an achievement on my part, I was invited to-day to perform a similar service in their six-oared wherry, before dinner. We pulled a considerable distance from the Factories, having gone round a small island in the Macao Passage, on which there is a pagoda.

Friday, 10.—Mr. Majoribanks arrived in Canton this morning, from Macao. I dined with Captain Baylis of the H. C. S. Canning, at whose table I met a large party, composed of the "rank and fashion" of foreign society in Canton.

Saturday, 11.—I was much occupied to-day in

* There are, it is said, no less than 50,000 tanka boats and 18,000 trading boats employed on the river.

writing letters, as a letter-bag for England was to be closed this evening. I dined with Mr. Dent, to meet Captain La Place, of the French corvette La Favorite. Captain Corstorphine, of the Ernâad, having volunteered to convey Captain Parkyns and his passengers from Whampoa to Lintin, where the Merope is at anchor, requested us to hold ourselves in readiness for embarking on the following day.

Sunday, 12.—There was a large dinner party to-day at the Factory, with the new Chief for the first time in the chair. Our society was graced by the presence of the only English ladies in Canton, Mrs. Thornhill and Mrs. Whiteman; and our embarkation having been fortunately deferred till the following day, I was enabled to participate in the pleasure which their presence diffused.

Monday, 13.—Having lost some dollars from my portmanteau a few days since, my suspicions naturally fell on my Chinese servant, who was the only person that had access to my apartment. He endeavoured to father the theft upon the house-porter, and this morning was accordingly appointed for all the Chinese servants of the house in which I resided, to undergo an ordeal that they expected would discover the guilty party. This was no other than taking an oath, dictated by their own superstitious notions of religion. The porter was the first to propose this method of proving his innocence, and the following is a translation of the oath which he pronounced on the occasion:—

"This being the twenty-ninth day of the tenth moon of the tenth year of Taou-Kwang, and Mr. Holman of the English nation having lost on the twenty-sixth instant sixteen dollars, which it is said I, the Coollie, stole. Since the affair cannot be otherwise cleared up, I, Paou Atae, in the presence of Heaven swear, before all the holy Pooysa (Gods), if I, Paou Atae, have stolen these sixteen dollars, may my wife and children and father and mother all die like this living cock. Witness this, ye azure Heavens. But if Atae has not stolen these sixteen dollars, may blessings descend upon my person, and my whole family enjoy tranquillity. I, Paou Atae, kneel, knock head, and present this oath."

Having uttered these words on his knees before a temporary altar (an old stool on which were placed two burning Joss candles), he rose, and seizing the cock, laid its neck on a piece of timber and instantly decapitated it with a cook's chopper. This acquitted him completely in the eyes of the Chinese assembled, and my servant was invited to adopt the same ceremony. He refused, however, notwithstanding his repeated protestations of innocence, and was accordingly considered by all present as the thief; the affair and the guilty servant were then dismissed together.

Arrangements having been entered into between Captains Corstorphine and Parkyns, for the departure of their passengers from Canton this afternoon,

I accordingly embarked in the boat of the Ernàad, about half-past three, for the purpose of proceeding to that vessel, which was lying at Whampoa, in readiness for sailing. I was accompanied on board by Messrs. Fox and Poe, and we were escorted to the water side by a number of our friends, who vied with each other in shewing us the most gratifying attention. Among the civilities which I received, I must not forget the politeness and good feeling of a Mandarin Custom-house officer, whose duty it was to examine the baggage previous to its embarkation. When I came forward with my keys to enable him to do so, he would not permit any thing whatever belonging to me to be opened, or examined; a delicacy, on his part, which was the more admired, perhaps, by myself and friends, from its being so little expected in a native of China. We arrived on board the Ernâad after a very cold row of nearly three hours duration; from which I have to date a very severe attack of rheumatism. Finding myself once more on board the ship in which I had formerly made a very pleasant voyage, it naturally brought old and agreeable recollections to my mind; particularly, as I felt a personal regard for Captain Corstorphine, from his gentlemanly conduct, and kind attention, during the time we were together.

Notwithstanding the Ernâad belonged to the Hon. Company's transport service, her equipment was, in every respect, similar to other country ships under the British flag; however, as Captain Cor-

storphine had served a long time in the navy, the discipline observed on board was similar to that in a British man-of-war. The crew consisted of 90 persons, composed of the following grades and nations:—1 Captain, and 3 European officers, 18 country-born Portuguese (Catholics), who are generally employed as follows,—1 gunner, 6 sea-cunnies, (quarter-masters), who are not only thorough seamen, but good sail-makers—4 sweepers, and the rest servants and cooks—2 Chinese carpenters, and 66 Lascars. Six of the latter are Sepoys, serving as marines.

The wages of the above-named officers and crew are as follows:—

Commander . .	450 rupees	per month.
Chief Mate . . .	130 .	ditto
Second Mate . .	100 .	ditto
Third Mate . . .	80 .	ditto
Gunner	40 .	ditto
Carpenter . . .	40 .	ditto
Boatswain . . .	30 .	ditto
Sea-cunnie . . .	22 .	ditto
The rest of the crew from	from 15 to 6	ditto

The Commander furnishes a table for his officers at sea; but during the time the ship is in port, the officers have to support a mess conjointly. The following provisions are usually served to a Lascar crew; viz. rice, dholl (split peas), ghee (clarified butter), salt-fish, and curry-stuff, of which they have, in most ships, three meals a day. The gun-

ner, carpenters, and sea-cunnies, from their not being Mohammedans, have, in addition to the above articles, salt meat and biscuits; and the gunner is often entirely supplied from the Captain's table. The Lascars, being prohibited by their religion from taking wine and spirits, the latter article is not regularly served out to them; however, they have no objections to it in wet weather, as it is then considered to be taken medicinally. From this we might suppose the Temperance Societies had borrowed a leaf from the Prophet's book; indeed, the Koran contains more moral and religious sentiments than the world are apt to give it credit for. In many of their habits and evil propensities, they resemble English sailors, particularly the Calcutta Lascars: those from Bombay being generally more prudent; from which circumstance, in addition to their being better seamen, and a stouter race of men, they are always preferred.

The square-rigged vessels sailing out of Surat, Guzerat, and Gogah, forms the best nursery for Lascar seamen, from whence Bombay is amply supplied; while those of Calcutta are from Chittagong, where there is not much trade, and, consequently, they have not the same advantages.

Among the Lascar seamen there are a few Arabs, Indian-born Africans, Malays, and Manilla-men; the latter of whom have always borne the character of being treacherous, and several lamentable instances of the verification of this observation have

occurred, which render great caution necessary wherever they are employed. A short time since, the gunner of the Ann, of Bombay, who was a Manilla-man, in whom great confidence was placed, from having been a long time in the same employ, formed a conspiracy, with the sea-cunnies, to take possession of the ship, intending to murder Captain Allan, and his officers, in which they nearly succeeded; and a few years previous to this, a very fine young man, Captain Langley, was murdered by two Malays; in consequence of there being a great deal of treasure on board. Luckily they were discovered, condemned, and executed at Rangoon. A friend of mine said, on attending their trial he was not a little astonished to find that one of the culprits had sailed with him for two years, and of all the persons in his situation, he thought him the most trustworthy and inoffensive.

Lascars are all more or less superstitious: the first thing they deem necessary on joining a ship is to make an offering of cocoa-nuts, the moment they put their foot on board; for if they were not to perform this ceremony, they would imagine some misfortune would befall them, or at least that they would have a very unsuccessful voyage. Although (unlike English seamen) they have no objection to sail on a Friday, yet they think it quite necessary to their well-being that they should do so at a particular period of the moon's age. They are much alarmed at the appearance of meteors,

ascribing to them the cause of awful and terrible disasters. One of the most common of their superstitions is, to believe that his Satanic Majesty occasionally visits the ship. He is always described as a colossal figure, with fiery eyes, an enormous mouth, and claw-fingered. On these occasions they will not go below all night. A report is frequently spread that he is coming on deck, when they fly to the rigging for safety. A friend of mine had been annoyed by them several nights successively in the above manner, when he at last gave out that he had come to the resolution of rewarding the clever fellow who should first see the devil. One of the men soon reported that he had done so, describing him as usual. The captain, wishing to put a stop to the frequent annoyance these alarms created, ordered the man to be flogged for the great penetration he had displayed in the discovery, and the devil was so displeased with what the captain had done, that he speedily disappeared, and he heard no more of his visits. The songs and long stories they repeat at night are of a most diversified nature. In the same watch may be heard a love story, a hymn to Mohammed, an obscene ditty, and a rant in praise of some former ship or commander.

The Hindostanee language is invariably spoken on board, unless in addressing the men at the helm and lead, when Portuguese is substituted.

The Lascars, in all well regulated ships, are

placed in watches, and stationed in the manner adopted in the Navy; and although they keep a regular watch day and night, they are all at an immediate call on the most trivial occasions. In India they are, from their habits and activity, in every respect preferable to European seamen, except in very cold weather; but in rain they appear quite in their element. My friend says:—During the height of the s. w. monsoon, I have often known them to be wet and constantly on deck for days and nights together without once changing their clothes, and this without a single complaint, while the Europeans, who kept regular watches, were all laid up with cold and fever. Their well-known inability to bear much cold is fortunately provided for by regulations of the Honourable Company, rendering it imperative on the part of ship-owners engaging native crews for long voyages, to furnish them with warm clothing, and other comforts, as well as the means of returning to their native country.

The high order and neatness of the country ships, as well as the manner in which they perform all their evolutions, has uniformly called forth the admiration of the naval officers on the Indian station. Native crews are engaged exclusively at Bombay and Calcutta, under an advance of from three to five months' wages, according to the probable length of the voyage. The roguery to which they are subjected, by being at the mercy of Ghaut-

Serangs, and crimps, surpasses, if possible, the evils of the crimping system in this country. The ship's Serang is the agent on behalf of the vessel in dealing with those on shore, and so well do they generally play into each other's hands, that at the end of a long voyage the poor Lascars have seldom anything to receive.

Tuesday, 14.—For want of a breeze we could not leave Whampoa till one, P. M. In our way down the river we passed the H. C. ships Marquis of Huntly, Reliance, and London, which were lying below the second bar, to which anchorage they always proceed in order to take in the remainder of their cargoes. We anchored soon after sunset near Tiger Island, not being permitted to pass the forts at the Bogue after dark. I suffered severely this evening from an attack of spasmodic rheumatism.

Wednesday, 15.—We got under weigh at seven o'clock, and passed the forts at the Bogue about an hour after, but so strong was the tide against us, that even with the aid of a fresh breeze we made but little progress. At half-past one, P. M. we anchored off the S. W. side of the island of Lintin, where the foreign vessels engaged in the opium trade, remain stationary during the N. E. monsoon, taking care to shift their anchorage for the opposite side of the island after the S. W. monsoon has set in. At the changes of the monsoons, when they are apprehensive of typhoons, they repair to the

more sheltered places of Cap-sing-moon, to the eastward of Lintin, or Kum-sing-moon, to the westward of that island.

We found the following vessels lying at anchor; the Merope, Parkyns; Samarang, Grant; Jane, Crockett; Jamisena, Hector; the American ships Scattergood, Tartar, Lintin, Margaret Forbes, and Terrier, brigantine; the Portuguese ship Don Manuel, and brig Letitia; the Danish brig Dansborg; and French ship La Rose.

When the opium ships first took up their station at Lintin, they found the inhabitants exceedingly averse to any intercourse with foreign vessels. After a little time, however, they perceived the advantages which a free communication held out to them, and their tone of aversion was soon changed to one of civility and friendship, so much so, that strangers may now traverse any part of the island without molestation.

The island of Lintin is five miles in circumference, and has a remarkably high peak in the centre. It contains several small villages, the principal one of which is on the s. w. side. It was here that the collision took place in December 1821, between the natives and the boat's crew of H. M. S. Topaze, when one Chinese was killed, and another died of his wounds.

Every one is acquainted with the importance that the Chinese Government attach to the death of a subject of the "celestial empire," at the hands

of a foreigner, whether it happens to be accidental, or intentional; not that they are supposed to set any great value on human life, but for the purpose of keeping "unruly foreigners" in due subjection, or with a view of benefiting by their disobedience.

The gunner of the English ship, who was given up to the Chinese in 1784, has unfortunately served them for a precedent in all subsequent disputes, where loss of life has ensued, except when British men-of-war have been concerned; in which cases they have acted the usual farce of sending forth threatening edicts, &c.; but finding their artillery of words fail in their intended effect, they have allowed the point in dispute to die away; and the Canton authorities have been reduced to the necessity of inventing some fictitious story, to enable them to send a false statement to the Emperor. The following circumstance will serve as an illustration of the above observations.

"Some time ago, an affray occurred at Kum-sing-moon, in which a foreigner was deliberately murdered by three or four natives, who overpowered him in the affray; and, to conceal the murder, instead of burying the body, they cut it to pieces, carried it in a fishing-boat out to the roads, and cast it into the sea. This statement was obtained from their own confession: no remnant of the man was ever found. On the other side, a native was wounded in the posteriors with small

shot; the parts mortified, and he died within twenty or thirty days. The local government caught the natives who murdered the foreigner; and they demanded that the foreigner, who fired the shot which wounded and caused the death of the native, should be found and delivered up to them. With this demand it was not practicable to comply. Week after week, they reiterated the order to have the 'foreign murderer,' as they called him, delivered up. At last, despairing of compliance, Government has connived at a Hong merchant,* a leader among that responsible body, having, for four or five hundred dollars, bribed some ignorant half-foreigner, about Macao, to personate the foreign murderer, and have put this confession into his mouth, in order that his life may be safe, and he be banished from China, after the farce of trial and report to the Emperor shall be gone through. This is the purport of the confession, which the Chinese admire for its ingenuity: 'The foreigner, who was killed at Kum-sing-moon,

* The Chinese have a capital crime which they call *ke-keun*, 'deceiving and insulting the sovereign.' The Hong merchant, who has acted in getting up the present farce, by buying the poor ignorant foreigner, has once in his life-time been nearly frightened to death by a Canton Judge threatening to convict him of the crime of *ke-keun*. Should the present fraud be discovered by the Emperor, the *farce* now enacting may be *tragical* for the parties many years hence. Yet, to get over the present difficulty, they foolishly run this risk.

was my elder brother; when I saw the natives murdering him, I ran up and stood forward to rescue him; at which moment, a fowling-piece I had fastened on my back went off and shot the native, who has since died. We two brothers were the only children of an old mother, who has now no one to take care of her. I beg for mercy, that I may return home and wait on my mother in her old age.'

"These circumstances were intended to be kept secret from foreigners; but common fame and some tell-tale divulged them. The foreigners protested to the Governor of Canton against an innocent man being thus implicated, although by his own ignorance and folly. The Governor has over and over again denied the man's innocence, but says the man has delivered himself up, in which there is some merit, and has confessed facts which will save his life, inasmuch as the deed was purely accidental—quite unintentional; therefore, he will not be required to forfeit his life. All this the Governor, the Judge, the Kwang-chow-foo, and other Mandarins concerned, as well as the foreign and native public, know is perfectly untrue; but with this fiction of law they are proceeding, and have reported to Peking in substance as above, and are now waiting, with the man in confinement, for the Emperor's answer."

The man was subsequently liberated unhurt.

Tuesday, 16.—The American ship Washington

arrived in Lintin Roads this morning, with the important intelligence of the death of our late King, George the Fourth, and the capture of Algiers by the French.

After breakfast, Captain Gover, who is extensively engaged in the opium trade, invited Mr. Fox and myself to accompany him on a visit to some of the floating opium stores, which several of the vessels in this trade may justly be considered, as they remain in China all the year round to facilitate the importation of this article, by receiving it from that class of vessels already spoken of, named opium-runners.

I examined specimens of the drug, made up into cakes and balls, and packed in cases; however the smugglers generally remove it from the ships in bags, in which it is more easily conveyed to the junks outside the port, and also for subsequent transport by land.

The importance of the opium trade must be evident from the number of foreign vessels employed in it, which carry on their illicit traffic in the most open and independent manner. In the first place, they bid defiance to all the Chinese authorities; and, instead of attending to the laws of China, they compel the Chinese to comply with their own regulations. Not a ball of opium is delivered until it has been previously paid for in cash, and the fear of their *cannon balls* effectually prevents the Chinese war-junks from interfering with them.

Does not this justify the inference that, if a similar plan were adopted for carrying on any other branch of trade with the Chinese, it might be prosecuted with equal success? In fact, the Mandarins frequently intimated as much to Mr. Lindsay, when he visited the ports to the northward of Canton, in the ship Lord Amherst.

It is evident we have nothing to apprehend from the naval force of China, as it appears that any well-armed foreign merchant-vessel may set a whole squadron of them at defiance, and it is clear that the native pirates can ravage the coasts whenever they think proper; indeed the local authorities of Canton cannot prevent acts of piracy being committed even within the precincts of the port. The following extract from a document under his Imperial Majesty's own hand-writing, will shew the opinion he entertains of his navy.

"The Pekin Gazette of the 29th of October, 1833, contains a paper of six pages, concerning the navy of China, from the pen (or rather pencil) of his Imperial Majesty, occasioned by the ineffectual attempts of the navy to put down piracy. He begins his paper by this first principle, that, according to the ancients, in the government of a nation, while civilians required rubbing up, the military no less required a brushing. 'Government,' he says, 'appoints soldiers for the protection of the people; and naval captains are not less important than dry-land soldiers. But the navy has lately fallen off, as

appears by many cases of failure on the high seas.

'On shore, a man's ability is measured by his archery, and his horsemanship; but a sailor's talent by his ability to fight with, and on the water. A sailor must know the winds and the clouds, and the lands, and the lines, (or passages among the sands.) He must be thoroughly versed in the breaking a spear with, (or beating against) the wind. He must know, like a god, how to break through the billows, handle his ship, and be all in regular order for action. Then, when his spears are thrown, they will pierce, and his guns will follow to give them effect. The spitting tornadoes of the fire-physic (gunpowder) will all reach truly their mark; and whenever pirates are met with, they will be vanquished wonderously. No aim will miss its mark. The pirate banditti will be impoverished and crippled, and even on the high seas, when they take to flight, they will be followed, and caught, and slaughtered. Thus the monsters of the deep, and the waves will be still, and the sea become a perfect calm, not a ripple will be raised.

'But, far different from this, have of late been the fact. The navy is a nihility. There is the *name* of going to sea, but there is no going to sea in *reality*. Cases of piracy are perpetually occurring, *and even barbarian barks anchor in our inner seas*, without the least notice being taken of them!' and so forth.

"After advising and threatening his naval servants, the Emperor adds, 'do not hereafter say, that you were not early warned.'"

As Capt. Parkyns was not prepared to accompany us, about noon Capt. Gover, Mr. Fox, and myself, went on board the packet-boat schooner, Flora,* belonging to Messrs. Dent and Co. and landed at Macao at four o'clock, having passed in the roads the French corvette La Favorite, and the Bengal ship Sherbourne: the latter had just completed the repairs consequent on the loss of her masts in the typhoon, on the morning of the 30th September.

Mr. Matheson having kindly offered me accommodation in his house, I accordingly proceeded thither, but was obliged to be carried, in consequence of suffering very acutely from rheumatism. I fortunately found that Dr. Hardie, of the Bengal army, occupied apartments in the same house, which was provided with a hot bath, and every other necessary convenience. Among my visitors was Mr. Pearson, surgeon of the Factory, who most obligingly volunteered his medical services, and favoured me with every kind attention that friendship could suggest. Although the cold weather had but recently set in, and I had experienced but little of its effects, I perceived that the least exposure was sufficient to bring on a return of my old complaint. This was only the second time since I left England,

* This schooner is about 70 tons, and was formerly Sir James Urmston's yacht.

that I had felt a degree of cold at all approaching the freezing point; and yet, on each occasion, the susceptibility of my system to that painful disease, was too fully testified. I continued much indisposed, and confined to my room, until *Sunday, the* 19*th*, when Captain Parkyns called, and announced his intention of sailing on the following morning, and that I must hold myself in readiness to embark with him in the afternoon. I was therefore obliged to leave a comfortable residence to endure the discomforts of a ship. At four o'clock, I proceeded in a Chinese sedan-chair to the place of embarkation, from which a fast boat conveyed us to the Merope, in the Macao roads. Captain Parkyns informed me, that all negociation respecting the passage of Sir James and Lady Home, to Swan River, had ceased; and he consequently could not think of visiting that colony, but proceed to Van Diemen's Land, *via* the Straits of Sunda, without calling at any port.

A residence in China, circumstanced as foreigners are, restrained in their intercourse and limited in their own circle, may be naturally supposed to be very monotonous, and possessing few inducements to a visitor, in the shape of variety; so occupied, however, was I, during my stay, in acquiring information at every attainable source which could be depended upon, that I not only found my time pleasingly diversified, but disposed of in a way that afforded me peculiar gratification, under the deprivation

which I suffer. Since my departure from China many circumstances have arisen to vary the nature of British intercourse with the natives, but none of such importance as the abolition of the East India Company's charter, and the arrival of Lord Napier in Canton as Chief of the new authorities. An edict was published in January, 1831, by the Governor of Canton, stating "that in case of the dissolution of the Company, it was incumbent on the British Government to appoint a Chief *to come to Canton* for the general management of commercial dealings." In accordance with this edict, Lord Napier was appointed, and was directed on his arrival to report himself *by letter*. His right to proceed to Canton, however, was disputed, without an express permit, though European boats have, for years past, been allowed to go to the provincial city without any necessity for such a document. But the Governor, by whatever feelings he may have been actuated, was determined in heaping every indignity on the head of the representative of the British Government. His letter, which he transmitted to the Governor the day after he reached Canton, was rejected because it was *not a petition*, but couched, with singular audacity, in terms of equality with the officers of the "central flowery land." He was denounced as a "*barbarian eye*," and "English devil," and the fact of his reaching Canton at midnight was construed into a "clandestine stealing into the city;" while at

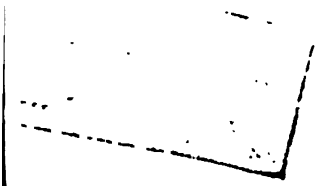
the same time he was commanded "when the commercial business which he had come to enquire into was *finished*, to return immediately to Macao." His "disobedience" was followed by the stoppage of the trade on the 16th of August. The Governor, who was influenced in a great measure by the Hong merchants, seems to have doubted or affected to doubt the intentions of Lord Napier when he styled him a "war commander," and the natural timidity of the Chinese, concealed under their pompous style, will most probably account, in some degree, for the proceedings which followed his arrival. This treatment induced Lord Napier to publish in Chinese an "Official Document exhibiting the present state of the relations between China and Great Britain." The Governor, however, had gone too far to recede, and a new edict immediately followed, denouncing as traitors all natives who held any communication with "the barbarians." Finding the suspension of the trade of serious injury to the British interests, Lord Napier issued an order on the 5th of September for H. M. S. Imogene and Andromache to pass the Bogue and afford that protection which was rendered necessary. The following is an account of their progress and its results:

Soon after noon on Sunday, the 7th of September, 1834, the frigates got under weigh, with a light breeze from the westward, when the forts and junks in Anson's Bay commenced firing their guns

with blank cartridges. A few minutes before one, the fort at Taikawktow fired a shot, and two followed from the fort in Anson's Bay. At 1h. 16m. the fort on Wang-tong Island fired three shots, which were returned by the Imogene, who was standing towards it. The Andromache was then on the opposite tack. At 1h. 35m. the firing commenced from both ships, on the new fort on Anunghoy, and the Wang-tong fort. Soon after 2 a few shots were fired from Tiger Island. At a quarter past 2 all firing ceased, and the ships anchored just below Tiger Island, where they continued all the following day, from the wind being very light and variable.*

On Tuesday, at 2h. 11m. P. M. the frigates got under weigh to proceed up the river, with a light breeze from the southward, when a shot was fired from the Wang-tong fort and the new one on Anunghoy. A few minutes after this, the fort on Tiger Island opened its fire on the ships, when a general firing commenced. At 2h. 45m. the forts ceased firing, and in ten minutes after, the frigates also discontinued, not however before they had completely accomplished their object of forcing

* Mr. W.J. Huggins, marine painter to his Majesty, having taken several views of the Bocca Tigris, when in China, most obligingly favoured me with the drawing for the accompanying plate, in which he has introduced the two British frigates forcing the passage of the Bogue. I am also indebted to Mr. Huggins for several original sketches which embellish the different volumes of this work.



ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN F[illegible]

the passage of the Bocca Tigris, for at 4 P. M. they anchored just below Second Bar Creek.

On the following day they advanced five miles further up the river, and on the evening of Thursday, the 11th, they anchored at Whampoa.

On Friday the 12th, overtures of accommodation were made by the Chinese, but were withdrawn in a few hours; which retraction is supposed to have been occasioned by their coming to the knowledge of the dangerous state of Lord Napier's health, and of his consequent determination to leave Canton. This he expressed in a letter, dated the 14th, to Mr. Boyd, Secretary to the Chamber of Commerce, in which he states that his intention was fixed, as the Hoppo had declared the trade should be re-opened on his departure. The next day his Lordship wrote to the British merchants to acquaint them that he did not any longer consider it expedient to persist in a course by which they were made to suffer, and informed them that he had written to Mr. Boyd, requesting to be supplied with the means of retiring, in order to admit of the opening of the trade. He further stated, that when he considered the subject in dispute was not of a commercial nature, but that it related entirely to himself; and that he had used every effort to carry his Majesty's instructions into effect without success, he did not feel himself any longer authorized to call on their forbearance. The departure of his Lordship for Macao, and its melancholy result,

are too well known to the public to require any further continuation of the narrative; but, perhaps, it may afford an useful illustration of the insolence of the Chinese authorities, and their impudent bravado, if I add, that an edict was issued by the Emperor, when he received the report of the Governor (in which all these circumstances were detailed in a most distorted manner, and in a style at once false and exaggerated), ordering that part of the honours which the Governor and his officers had been deprived of for their previous neglect, should now be restored to them for the course they had taken, but particularly for "having driven the barbarian eye (Lord Napier), and others, out of the port."

Before I finally take my leave of China, I will devote a few chapters to a review of the character and manners of the people, founding my opinions upon the information I collected while I was on the spot, and upon such documentary and other evidence as I have been able to obtain in China and elsewhere. I can answer with perfect confidence for the truth of my statements. The opportunities I possessed for testing their credibility, were such as do not often occur to travellers, for I had the good fortune not only to be in the midst of the English intercourse with the natives, but to have been at Canton at a period of more than ordinary interest and excitement. The character of the Chinese is, I believe, almost as little known in Europe as their

history; at all events, it is not known very accurately. The succeeding summary may, therefore, be regarded as developing information in some measure novel, and I trust useful. I have also ventured, in addition, upon a brief sketch of the Chinese history, as an appropriate conclusion to my researches in that country. I claim for this sketch no further merit than that of giving, in a small compass, the prominent facts from the earliest time of their authentic records, and of weeding from the narrative all those absurd and fabulous legends with which it has been the delight of previous writers to overload it. I hope that this may prove acceptable, as a contribution to our historical knowledge, that was felt to be wanted; and if it be found to furnish a clear, although brief review of the annals of a nation, hitherto obscured in clouds of speculation, I shall not consider that my labour has been misapplied.

CHAP. IV.

Manners and Customs—Festivals and their Abuses—Distinctions conferred by the Emperor—Modes of Salutation—Honours and Rewards paid to the Aged—Characteristics of Happiness and Misery—Rules of Regimen—Popular Superstitions—Vaccination—Badges of Civil and Military Ranks—A Dexterous Rogue—Raffles and Lotteries—Installation of the Hoppo—Constant Followers—Canton Bankers—Chinese Coin—Mountaineer Tribes.

THE manners and customs of the Chinese are, in a great measure, in consequence of their jealousy of other nations, peculiar to themselves; and yet they are in possession of many habits, which would seem to have been adopted, by a general instinct, among all civilized nations. The observance of the new year* is the most important of their festivals: on this occasion, both rich and poor, the people and their rulers, indulge in a universal cessation from business, and search after pleasure. By an order of the Court, the business of Government is closed on the 20th of the twelfth moon; and not resumed, except in particular cases, till the 20th of the first moon: a release of thirty days is thus given to the various functionaries, and the feasting and amusements of the people are maintained for nearly the same period, according to the nature or necessity of

* The Chinese make their new year commence on the new moon, nearest to the time when the sun's place is in the 15th degree of Aquarius.

their respective occupations. Before the close of the old year, they perform several domestic rites, such as sweeping clean the furnace and hearth, in honour of their household gods. On new year's eve, they bathe in warm water, perfumed with the leaves of the Wong-pe and Pumelo trees, and arise at midnight, clad in their most costly dresses, to kneel down towards Heaven, and perform the imperial ceremony of knocking the head on the ground three times. Then they join in general illuminations, and pray to their several domestic idols, or visit those in the neighbouring temples. They burn incense, gilt and silver papers, let off fireworks, and repeat at intervals their adorations. Having concluded these religious ceremonies, they commence at daylight the civilities of visiting their relatives and friends, with whom they indulge in mutual congratulations on the birth of the new year. The final day of the old year is also, however, the occasion on which transactions of a very opposite nature take place: it is the general *pay day*, and consequently presents a scene of turbulence and confusion, caused by the disputes of eager creditors and moneyless debtors, whose inability exposes them to attack and insult—the creditors are, at times, so bent on annoyance, that they amuse themselves in the wholesale destruction of household furniture, &c. After the expiration of the old year, the inhabitants give themselves up to feasting and dissipation for several weeks, and continue their carousing accord-

ing to the means which each may possess. Similar observances are followed at the new and full moon, but especially on the occasions of the first and second new moons in each year; general sacrifices and burnt-offerings are made to the idols, which are also presented with *cups of tea:* libations of wine or spirits are poured out; prayers are offered in the manner already described, and presents made by parents and superiors. The officers of Govern ment repair before break of day to some neighbour ing temple, where they offer incense.

Another ceremony, universally observed by the Chinese, is that of the *Tsing-ming*, which com mences generally about the 5th of April, and may be held upon any day within a month from its commencement: the inhabitants of all classes repair to the hills, or *tumuli* of their ancestors, to sacrifice to their manes, and cleanse and decorate their tombs. Upon these occasions, all the kindred of the deceased proceed together, supplied with abundance of fruits, cakes, and wine: they erect tents upon the hills, and go through the various forms of worship and prayer which they use to their idols. The following is the tenor of the prayer which they generally repeat: "We, a multitude of children, grandchildren, and other descendants, now, [on such a day,] have come hither to worship at our ancestors' tumuli. We pray that, by the protection of our ancestors, we may become prosperous; and that their descendants may have constant support." The fear lest

he should be without posterity to do him these posthumous honours is a source of great uneasiness to a Chinaman, and they are considered so necessary to the peace of the departed, that benevolent individuals frequently perform these rites, at graves, which would otherwise be deserted, either through the failure or the absence of the kindred of the deceased. In Java, and other places, societies are instituted for these charitable though superstitious purposes. It is not unusual with the Chinese to remove the remains of their ancestors to some other burial ground, from the belief that that in which they were already deposited was unlucky: they destroy the old coffin, and wrapping the bones in paper, place them in an urn. The rich are accustomed to go to great expense in purchasing their own coffins, or rather slabs of timber with which they are manufactured. They preserve these in their houses to dry, and keep them, not as a memento of the frailty of life, but in the supposition that their possession is the means of prolonging their existence. Corpses are not permitted to enter the gates of Peking without an imperial order, in consequence of a rebel having at one time adopted the singular expedient of personating one, to have himself conveyed into the city. In all other towns in China, there is an express interdiction against their entry through the southern gate, because the face of the Emperor, when he is seated on his throne, is turned towards the South. On the death of any person of

rank or consequence, it is usual for the people to perform funeral ceremonies, and offer sacrifices to his manes, numberless sheep and pigs being slaughtered for that purpose. It is, also, the practice on the part of the nearest of kin, to make the people a suitable return, and which generally amounts to double the expenditure. The eldest son of the principal Hong merchant at Canton died there a few years back, and the *whole city* turned out to do him honour: the usual animal offerings were made and subsequently eaten, and large quantities of liquor were, of course, used to wash down the feast: it is supposed that the expenses incurred by his father were, at least, from fifty to a hundred thousand dollars. The Government allows portions of waste land in the vicinity of towns, to be appropriated by the poor for burial-grounds: but even here, in the sanctuaries of the dead, the votaries of extortion have taken their stand: fellows, entitled *grave-dogs*, make a practice of opposing the interment until their acquiescence has been purchased by a fee. The magistrates, in endeavouring to suppress these usurpers of the tombs, have ordered that the claims of individuals to such burying-places shall not be considered valid, without the production of written deeds entitling them thereto. On the death of a parent in China, the holder of an official situation is obliged, by law, to relinquish it for three years, during which time of mourning he is incapacitated

to resume it. The period for which a *Tartar* officer is disqualified by such an event is limited to one hundred days. These usages are a constant source of promotion, being similar in effect to those observed with regard to Fellows in the English Colleges, on occasion of their marriage. In the month of September an annual examination for official appointments takes place at Canton, and creates as much bustle and excitement as a general election in the United Kingdom: the candidates have similar personal privileges to those of our Members of Parliament. Numerous individuals are employed to write essays for those candidates who are incapable of writing themselves; but the magistrates do not fail to denounce and punish such deception. The attorneys do not lose this opportunity of pursuing their trade, but frequently obtain money from the aspirants, by threatening to oblige them to attend as witnesses in prosecutions.

The *Tung-che*, or winter solstice, is the occasion of another popular festival of the Chinese; it is observed on the twenty-second of December, or the sixteenth day of the eleventh moon. The grateful acknowledgment of the returning sun is the influence which inspires the observance. All the officers of the principal towns, whether Tartar or Chinese, civil or military, repair with great solemnity at day break to the Imperial Hall, entitled *Wan Show King*, or "the Pavilion of ten thousand years." There the usual ceremony is per-

formed, of kneeling three times, and bowing the head twice to the earth on each genuflexion. The forms of worship are gone through, as already described, and provisions of various kinds are prepared and offered up by the inhabitants on their domestic altars, as sacrifices to the reputed shades of their ancestors. On the conclusion of this religious rite, which is by some observed in the morning, by others in the evening, the eatables are converted to a more reasonable use, and furnish an abundant feast, of which relations, friends, and neighbours are invited to partake. In schools, boys assemble to worship Confucius, whose name, or presumed likeness, is placed behind the altar: they also enact the obeisance of bowing the head to their schoolmaster, who is requested to be seated whilst they pay him that honour: he generally stands, however, not being, perhaps, ambitious of sharing the homage which is paid to the prophet. The Christmas-day of European nations is considered by the Chinese as a similar term to their solstitial festival. The natives of China have a custom, peculiar to themselves, of paying their visits before breakfast; and the different functionaries make their official engagements at the same unseasonable hour.

Some idea may be formed of the despotism of the Chinese Emperors, from the fact, that his present Majesty was pleased to extend a particular mark of favour to his younger brother, King *Tun-tsin*, in per-

mitting him to "walk within the precincts of the inner Palace." He also, as a peculiar act of grace, allowed his uncle, when he attained the venerable age of eighty-four, to appear in his presence without kneeling. An ambassador from Corea met with a most flattering reception from the Emperor, at whose hands he received certain talismanic tablets, on which the words *Prosperity* and *Longevity* were written by the monarch himself; these cheap rewards are, notwithstanding, held in great consideration. The *Foo-yun*, or Deputy Governor, of Canton, was presented with the word *Happiness* in a similar manner, accompanied, however, by the more substantial present of a haunch of venison. The gates of the Public Hall were thrown open to receive it, and the usual head-knocking ceremony was performed, in acknowledgment of the great condescension shewn by a Prince whose dominion extends over, at least, 300 millions of subjects. *Hwang-tseen*, an old servant of the Government, who had reached his eightieth year in the Imperial service, addressed a letter of thanks to his Majesty, in which he bestowed upon him all the attributes of a Deity: the reply which was returned was, "Che-taou-leaou," which signifies, "I know it." The answer was accompanied by substantial proofs of consideration on the part of his Majesty.

When the Emperor passes through the streets of Peking, the route which he takes is hung on each side with curtains and tapestry to prevent indivi-

duals of low rank from rudely gazing on the "Representative of Heaven," or, perhaps, having the audacity to approach his person. Should he travel from one part of the Celestial Empire to another, the greatest care is taken to keep the lower orders at a respectful distance, though individuals of peculiar daring do, sometimes, take the opportunity of appealing to his Majesty, against the oppression for which they have been unable to obtain any redress from a lower authority. The success which may attend such appeals is, however, doubtful, and the probability is that the petitioner will only expose himself to severe punishment for his presumption.

The following are the grades of salutation and homage used by the Chinese:—

"The lowest form by which respect is showed in China at this day is *Kung-show*, that is, joining the hands and raising them before the breast. The next is *Tso-yih*, that is bowing low with the hands joined. The third is *Ta-tseen*, bending the knee, as if about to kneel. The fourth is *Kwei*, to kneel. The fifth is *Kow-tow*, kneeling, and striking the head against the ground. The sixth *San-kow*, striking the head three times against the earth before rising from one's knees. The seventh *Luh-kow*, that is kneeling, and striking the forehead three times, rising on one's feet, kneeling down again, and striking the head again three times against the earth. The climax is closed by *San-kwei-kew-kow*,

kneeling three different times, and at each time knocking the head thrice against the ground. Some of the gods of China are entitled only to the *San-kow*, others to the *Luh-kow;* the *Teen* (heaven) and the Emperor are worshipped with the *San-kwei-kew-kow*. Does the Emperor of China claim divine honours?"

Age, which, among many eastern nations, entails upon its possessors the most barbarous and fatal treatment, ensures to them in China not only general and deep respect, but the patronage of the highest authorities. The Emperors have been accustomed to take them under their peculiar protection. Kang-he caused a law to be issued, by which the name of every widow in the Empire who had reached her hundredth year without entering into a second marriage, should be reported to him, that he might confer upon her the sum of thirty taels for the erection of an "Honorary Gateway," with an inscription over it, of "The Door of Chaste Longevity." The sum of ninety taels was given by his successor, Yung-ching, to a man who had reached his hundred and eighteenth year, and an enactment was made by the same Emperor, by which the Imperial gift of thirty taels would be increased one fold for every ten years in addition to the hundred. In the reign of Kien-lung, a man whose name was Tang-yun-shang, and whose years were no less than one hundred and thirty, was presented with one hundred and

twenty taels and some pieces of silk, and a promise was given of thirty additional taels in case he lived ten years longer. This individual was asked, one day, what medicine he had used to lengthen his existence. He replied, that he had never taken medicine in all his life, but attributed his longevity to his plentiful consumption of rice, and indulgence in sleep.

The last mentioned monarch, at the age of eighty, was the founder of five generations, from himself to his great-great-grandson, who was eight years old. To the latter he presented an imperial yellow vest—"Remembering, as I do," said he, "that when I attended my grandfather, I shot and hit five times successively, which induced his heavenly expression of approbation, and my mother's countenance likewise brightened up with joy. Then I was twelve years of age, and my Imperial grandfather bestowed upon me a yellow vest." He ordered all similar instances of five living generations in one family, to be reported to him, that he might present the father with 60 taels. Of those who retained in their own houses so many lineal descendants, the majority had reached the age of 100; but one instance was found of a man whose age was only 78. The Emperor Kea-King limited the donation to those who had seen eight generations. On one occasion, the husband had reached the age of 100, and his wife surpassed him by one year; the Emperor bestowed upon them 20 pieces of silk, 20 taels, and

tablets two inscribed—"Felicitous Persons of a glorious Dynasty:" he was, also, pleased to compose odes, suggested by the occasion.

The following are the Chinese characteristics of a man of a happy temperament:—"Contentment—Constant ease and pleasure in his own mind—Treating every one, whether high or low, with humility and complaisance—Not usurping a benefit, but yielding a convenience or advantage to another—Not meddling with many affairs—When speaking to others, never crying about his own poverty, nor telling his own distresses."

On the contrary, those, whose habits are calculated to ensure them poverty and wretchedness, are thus distinguished:—"Going to bed early and getting up late—Having a field and a garden, and never attending to them—Wasting provisions—Making a great many fine things—Feeding idle people—Subscribing largely to religious processions, and dramatic performances, i.e. giving largely to the church and the playhouse—Fond of lounging and idling about—Being over parsimonious—Buying antiques and useless curiosities—Fond of making alterations—Taking pleasure in changes of residence—Imitating the external show of rich people—Ambitious of high and noble acquaintances—Giving large marriage portions to daughters—Frequent fires and robberies occasioned by carelessness—Fond of laying out gardens and building pavilions—Associating with Mandarins—Indeci-

sion and believing every cheat—Teaching boys for the stage—Spending time with gamesters—Brothers and sisters constantly quarrelling—Living at great expense—Making it a constant study to please the appetite—However stupid, being pleased with flattery."

Pamphlets have occasionally been published on the subject of diet, imparting many important hints for its proper regulation, which the excesses of the inhabitants prove to be far from unnecessary. I have extracted some observations from one of them, which will give some idea of the order usually observed in eating.

"If you are very hungry before eating, don't eat to satiety; if you are very thirsty before drinking, don't drink much.

"Let the morning meal be tsaou, the noon meal be paou, and the evening meal be shaou, i. e. the first *early*, the second *hearty*, and the last *spare*. Immediately after eating, to indulge in anger, is very injurious. These are general rules and important principles of regimen. As to the order of eating, begin by drinking a mouthful or two of tea; then take two or three mouthfuls of plain rice; after which you may add the vegetables and rich dishes. Generally speaking, you should take abundance of rice, and but little meat, greens, and rich messes. In eating you should rather be before than after the time; and should eat leisurely; not in a coarse hurried manner. You should stop eating at eight

or nine tenths of being full. Your food should be rather plain than rich; rather warm than cold. Your food should be soft and over done; not hard and under done.

"After eating, drink two or three mouthfuls of tea. Rinse your mouth and wash your teeth very clean; do not use a stiff horse-tail tooth brush; but a soft hair brush with warm water. Rise and walk leisurely a few scores, or a hundred paces. These are important rules for eating,

"After having eaten heartily, you should not soon lie down; nor get into a passion; nor sit stupidly; nor yet skip about. These prohibitions are carefully to be obeyed after eating. Anger, before eating, is as injurious as after eating. It deranges the digestive powers."

The various provinces of China are bound to forward annually to Pekin, stated sums for the purchase of *rice*, for the use of the Criminal Board, and the governors are enjoined to secure its regular transmission.

That the superstitions of the Chinese should have clung to them during the period of time they have existed as a nation, is certainly a matter of astonishment; but our wonder ceases as we become acquainted with the ignorance and weakness which characterise throughout even their most influential and leading men, and which may be easily traced to the same source—their foolish antipathy to a free intercourse with all other nations. This antipathy is

caused, in some measure, by the pride, but, in a greater degree, by the timidity of their disposition. Shut up, thus, among themselves, and depressed by the darkness of ignorance and idolatrous practices, it can scarcely excite our surprise that their intellectual powers should have advanced as slowly as their cultivation of knowledge. The belief in good and bad fortune is very prevalent among them; they do not attribute either, however, to any supernatural influence; but consider the position of their doors and windows, the site of their houses, or family graves, as the presiding cause. This notion is entertained by all classes without distinction: a merchant, whose extravagance and inattention to business, had nearly ruined his affairs, applied, on one occasion, to the Geomancers for their advice, as to the means of improving his circumstances; he removed, in compliance with their suggestions, his counting-house doors to the opposite side, and has since been anxiously and confidently awaiting the prosperity which this change is expected to procure him. Upon the occurrence of an eclipse of the sun, in 1832, his Excellency, the Lieutenant Governor of Canton, went into mourning, and performed many humiliating acts in deprecation of the awful calamities which he supposed would follow that event, with the natural causes of which he was quite as unacquainted as the lowest of his countrymen. In the erection of a breakwater, at the mouth of the Yang-tsze-Keang, the works were

threatened with total destruction by a strong easterly wind, which caused the rapid influx of the tide: prayers and sacrifices were immediately offered to the manes of Chow-chung-hung, who had been drowned, about a hundred years before, whilst building a pier near the same spot: on the conclusion of the ceremony, the wind suddenly abated, and the danger, so generally dreaded, was at an end. They did not fail to attribute to the benevolence of Chow-chung-hung, this miraculous escape, and his deification was consequently requested of the Emperor, who caused a temple to be erected to him, that he might participate in the annual offerings made to the gods.

Vaccination was first introduced into China by Mr. Pearson, in the year 1810, and A-he-qua, the Comprador to the E. I. Company, was the first native who submitted to the operation. In 1816, he produced a Chinese pamphlet on the subject, in which he endeavoured to disseminate its use among his countrymen. He was not candid enough to state the name, or nation of the discoverer, but arrogated to China a prior acquaintance with it; as a proof of which he asserts, that the principle of its communication by the fly, which fastens on the cow, may be found in the Chinese work, entitled Pih-tsaou Hang-muh. The fly, alluded to, sucks the blood of the cow till it drops off from repletion: the mode by which the blood is inserted when thus obtained, is not very clearly described. He further

tates, that, the method of inviting the disease, by receiving the matter into the nostril, was introduced in the 11th century, under the *Sung* dynasty, on whom he lavishes numberless thanksgivings for originating so beneficial a discovery. This Ahe, nicknamed Longhead, has derived considerable advantages of rank and profit from the use of vaccination. The officers in Canton vied with each other in conferring obligations on him equal to his services; one presented him with a gold button; another with a tablet, on which he inscribed the motto, or rather wish, of the ancients—"A cure without medicine;" while a third rewarded him with a *sonnet*, which he composed in his praise.

The civil officers in China wear badges of *birds* on their breasts: there are ten distinct sorts in use, such as the peacock, the crane, &c.; one being worn by each of the nine classes, and the tenth appropriated to the We-jah-lun, or non-commissioned officers, who do not hold any decided rank, in consequence of their belonging to the plebeian part of the community.

It may be as well to observe, that the Tartar Conquerors, when they dictated to the Chinese the tonsure, and the long tail, altered also the dress of the people; especially the cap, which is perfectly different from any cap previously worn in China. The summer and the winter dress caps differ, but they both agree in being of a low conical shape, and having a round knob at the vertex,

which knob, by its material and colour, always shews the rank of the wearer.

The first and second degrees of rank are marked by a *red* precious stone, or coral knob, or button.

The third and fourth degrees of rank are denoted by a *blue* button.

The fifth degree is shewn by a *chrystal* button.

The sixth and seventh degrees are shewn by an *opaque white*, or milk-coloured button.

The eighth and ninth degrees are shewn by a *gold*, or *gilt* button.

The lowest degree should be *silver*, but it is never worn.

The badges worn by the military, are representations of *beasts*, and are six in number; one of them, the *Ke-lin*, is a species, which has not been known to exist since the time of Confucius. When troops are sent to the stations on the frontier beyond Cashgar, the singular expedient is adopted of permitting the inferior officers to wear the button and feather of a higher rank, in order to make a more imposing effect on the barbarians of those districts; it is supposed that the English, at the Gooilla frontier, have been deceived in a similar manner. Care is taken, however, on the return of such individuals, to deprive them of the ornaments in question. On the occasion of a review in Canton, the private soldiers receive a donation of copper coin; the officers are rewarded with pieces of silk; and silver medals, accompanied by promises of

early promotion, are given to those whose expertness brings them into particular notice. Those, on the contrary, who are remarkable for awkwardness, or the *lack of bodily strength*, are degraded and publicly disgraced. There are several military schools, in which the sons of rich men, who are intended for the army, are drilled in the different exercises. In one of these, the dexterity of a Chinese rogue was put into practice, a few years ago, at the cost of some of the young cadets of the establishment. A man, who had just entered, related a surprising story of a fellow who went about the city, and robbed the very clothes off the backs of the people. The youths enquired with eagerness, how he managed to succeed in such an attempt; and their informant immediately proceeded to gratify their curiosity. He clothed himself from head to foot in their upper garments, which they had thrown off whilst practising their exercises, then played a few occasional tricks, and to enforce the felonious plan more clearly, walked out at the door and locked it after him. They waited for his return with great patience; but, as he did not make his appearance again, they found themselves the dupes of his artifice.

Among a people so addicted to gambling as the Chinese, the passion for raffles and lotteries, is, it may naturally be supposed, very general. Raffles are the common resource of traders, who wish to dispose of a commodity, whose quality is not likely

to attract a ready purchaser. They are conducted on the same principle as in England, with the exception of using *six* dice. The property of a father, when there is any difficulty in ascertaining its exact value, is divided among his sons by lot. A public system of lottery is also in existence, though not sanctioned by Government. The keepers of the different stands are enabled to maintain them by bribing the police. The plan of the lottery is this: ten thousand tickets are issued at the rate of three *cash* each. Eighty characters are inscribed on the tickets. The purchaser selects ten of these characters: on the day of drawing, the lottery-keeper takes the eighty characters on separate slips of paper, and having well shaken them, divides them into four heaps. He then destroys three heaps, or sixty characters, leaving twenty to be drawn. If the characters of the purchaser resemble any of the twenty drawn, he is entitled to a prize in proportion to the number similar; and provided he has *five* characters like those that are drawn, there is a possibility of the three cash realizing upwards of a hundred dollars. Such is the spirit of gambling which this lottery infuses among the people, that they not unfrequently sell their clothes, and even their "musquito curtains," to enable them to purchase tickets.

The following are the formalities observed by the Hoppo, or Commissioner of Duties, on the occasion of his assuming the seals of office. He

appears in court dress at the gate of his office, and goes through the ceremony of kneeling and knocking his head before the altar of a divinity placed there for that purpose. The usual offerings of incense, gilt-papers, candles and crackers, are made. He repeats the devotions at the second door leading to the great hall. When he has reached the latter, his secretaries, clerks, and dependants range themselves in two divisions, and call upon him to use his seal, which his keeper is immediately ordered to do, applying it to the words " Fair winds" and " Genial showers." It is next applied to the words " Government tranquil:" " People repose;" and in conclusion is annexed to an expression of good wishes for the Hoppo, conveyed in the significant terms, " Affluent place," and " High rank." His admonitions in red paper are then handed to the different officers under his command, and they perform the ceremony of kneeling and knocking their heads in congratulation on his appointment. The Hong merchants, over whom he presides, and the Linguists then pay him a similar honour. On which he retires from the great hall and repairs to the kitchen, where he offers sacrifices to " the presiding god of the furnace," to secure the health of his family.

The servants of Mandarins are, in general, persons of education and abilities, and are often employed, by the magistrates whom they serve, in the

execution of public business. They are known by the title of Chang-sing, "Constant Followers," a name originally given by an Emperor to one of his servants, on account of his fidelity. They are composed of different grades. The first consists of descendants of poor Mandarins; the next is composed of the sons of wealthy merchants, who, becoming bankrupts, left them no other resource but serving the magistrate, to whom their acquaintance with the ways of life is a sufficient recommendation. Others have been taken from the haunts of dissipation, from which they have gained a tact and knowledge that suits them for employment. And a fourth class enlists in its ranks, fellows who are willing to be made the instruments in any depravity which the debauched habits of their masters may suggest. Proclamations have been frequently issued at Macao, prohibiting the extortions of coolies, or licensed porters, on the arrival of a foreign ship at that port. They have been threatened with the infliction of the wooden collar, in case they exact more than is usually paid them by the natives.

The bankers in Canton are termed *Shroffs*, and possess about 70 establishments in that city. The dealings of some are carried on solely in Sycee silver and bullion, whilst the rest extend their transactions to the exchange of dollars and other money. The Hong merchants, who are often partners in these establishments, employ the bankers to manufacture the

Sycee; each ingot of which is stamped with the Hong chop, the date of its melting, and the name of the shroff. The adulteration of this bullion has never been known to have taken place; the punishment for such an offence would not only be severe to the parties engaged in it, but would be entailed upon every member of their families. The purity of gold, if of a very high touch, is commonly tested by the touch-stone, which is a sure method above the rate of 95 or 96: below these numbers, they resort to a process which they call *roasting*, used in the examination of silver. The Chinese have but one coin, which is called *tung-tseen*, or more generally *cash;* it is of copper, and the value but a third of an English farthing. There are petty shroffs, who occupy stalls in the streets, and exchange this coin for dollars, or pieces of silver, for which they receive a certain commission. A tael is equal to 1000 of these *cash*, which, notwithstanding their trifling value, are frequently counterfeited. There is a coin, similar to this, in use among the Cochin Chinese, on which the names of their kings are impressed, as those of the emperors are on the Chinese coin. A great influx of this foreign money had taken place in Canton, amounting to nearly one half of the circulation, but the Emperor, on being informed of the circumstance, felt his dignity so hurt by the use of a foreign coin among his subjects, that he ordered it to be totally prohibited in future. This order was, of course, a

source of great inconvenience to people in trade. Their objection to the circulation of dollars, imported by Europeans, is equally great; as may be seen by the following extract from an imperial edict on the subject.

"I have heard that the foreigner's money called the big wig; the little wig (dollars); the deshevelled head; the bat; the double pillars; the sword and horse (dollar), &c. pass current in the interior; not to buy goods, but to buy silver. They clandestinely exchange them for Sycee silver at a deduction of two or three candareens.

"From Fokien to Canton; Keang-se, Che-keang, Keang-soo, up to the Yellow River, and in all the provinces South of it, the foreign money prevails. In paying the land-tax, and in trading transactions, there is no case in which foreign money is not employed. Foreign ships pretend that they bring it into China to buy goods; but they import dollars, and have them conveyed to all the provinces and harbours, for the special purpose of buying Sycee, so that silver daily diminishes in the interior, and foreign money increases. The high price of silver of late years must surely be attributed to this cause."

In the various provinces of China there are tribes of mountaineers, who live in a wild and uncivilized condition, and most of whom do not acknowledge themselves subject to the Chinese Government. They are known by the general ap-

pellation of *Miao-tsze*, supposed to be so called from *Miao*, an ear of grain, in allusion to their natural and primitive mode of life. The *Yaou-tow* tribe are addicted to fighting. They do not employ cattle in agriculture, but substitute the efforts of human strength. The women braid their hair on the crown of their heads, and wear fan-shaped bonnets, adorned with silver thread; to fasten them they use long pins, fashioned like a guitar. They wear double rings in their ears, and round their necks they carry several of considerable size. Their clothes, which are short, have an embroidered border. They observe an invariable custom, by which the daughters of the sister marry the sons of the brother. Should the uncle have no sons, the niece is, nevertheless, handed over to him, and he obtains a husband for her, or not, as he thinks proper, having paid the dowry to her parents. The *Tsing-chung* tribe are so called from their blue garments. They pound the bones of animals with rice, and when this mixture has become sour and rancid it is considered a great delicacy. The women are of fair complexion, and are very expert at the needle. Chess is a favourite amusement with them, and also hand-ball, at which they are very dexterous. They are, however, totally unacquainted with letters. Among the *Tsung-chuh-lung*, the young women are always dressed in white: married women wear, as a distinctive body, square caps of fine cloth, and allow their hair to hang down

their backs in the shape of a tail, to the length of two feet: this they rub at times with hog's lard, which is attended, as may be supposed, with anything but a pleasant smell. There are about eighty of these Clans, the manners of some being, in a slight degree, and of others, not at all, removed from barbarism. One of them, a race of vagrant gypsies, employ themselves in the collection of medicinal herbs, and the study of their application. They are generally found by the side of mountain-streams, and remain but a short time in the same spot. They are remarkable for their honesty and simplicity. There are other gypsy clans, who come from the eastern district of Canton, and who are distinguished by very different habits; on coming to the town they raise their mat sheds by the sides of the roads, or in the burial grounds, where they render themselves so obnoxious that they have obtained the nick-name of "Hill-dogs," and are continually subjected to the prosecution of the magistrates. On the occasion of a funeral, one of them will throw himself into the grave, from which he cannot be removed without the payment of a fee. The dread of inflicting bodily injury, which the law would render penal, in such a case, prevents the injured parties from proceeding in a summary manner with such intruders. When a grave has become deserted, no kindred being left to pay it the customary honours, these fellows appropriate it to themselves, and, taking up the

remains, dispose of the ground. Some of the mountaineers, just mentioned, have lately made their appearance in Canton, to which they came down the western river in light boats, having taken about a month in the passage. They brought with them oil, which they were desirous of exchanging for betel-nut, opium, &c. They had got a smattering of the Chinese language, from which their native tongue is totally different: the latter is merely oral, and they have, consequently, no books or writings of any description. Nor have they any defined forms of worship, but are without either priests or temples. The only religious observance they follow is a part of the new year's ceremony, which they acquired from the Chinese.

CHAP. V.

Immoral character of the Chinese—Prevalence of Corruption—Social Ties—Chinese Ethics—Wives and Concubines—Grounds of Divorce—Education—Gambling—Pugilistic Code—Suicide—Criminal Law—Hypocrisy and Venality of the Authorities—Extensive and Ingenious Systems of Plunder, by land and water—Kidnapping—Laws and Edicts—Despotism of the Magistracy—Prisons.

The contemplation of the moral character of the Chinese is any thing but pleasurable. It would seem that the causes which weigh down, or indeed extinguish, their mental energies give additional range to the depravity of their hearts, and that their constitutional weakness makes them an easy prey to the passions and vices which are ever ready to take possession, where there is an adhering predisposition to entertain them. The proclamations of the magistrates at Canton to enforce the better observance of public decorum are ceaseless, and no other proof than their frequency is required to point out their inefficiency, while the force of example carries all before it. In a conversation between the Foo-yuen and some Mandarins who visited him during his indisposition, he is reported to have expressed himself in the following terms:—"When first I came to Canton, I was ignorant of the manners,

customs, and habits of the people, and I fancied that they were the same as in other parts of the empire. I have been an attentive observer of men and things, here and elsewhere. I have examined and compared. The comparison is woefully against Canton: deceit and falsehood prevail everywhere—in all ranks and in all places. There is no truth in man, nor *honesty* in woman! I have endeavoured in vain to correct these evils: it has been labour lost. I am sick at heart, and wish to depart from such scenes of vice, and habitual falsehood, finding that they are too deep-rooted ever to be eradicated. I have implored the Emperor to allow me to depart in peace. All is vanity and vexation of spirit." Vicious habits are so universal among all ranks, that the edicts of the magistrate are quite unavailing, and he is often obliged to call upon fathers and elder brothers to use their exertions in the suppression of vice in the younger branches of society; these habits are encouraged by the existence of so many receptacles for dissipation, to which young men are ensnared, and from which they cannot tear themselves till their property is squandered, and destitution drives them to the commission of more serious offences. In the streets the walls are frequently covered with placards, puffing off the drugs of quack doctors for the use of the dissolute, and written in language that bears neither the stamp of decency nor civilization. It is not unusual to advertise, in a similar way, the loss of a concubine,

the description of whose dress and flight is given without any regard to delicacy. The magistrates often cause these productions to be defaced with whitewash; but the police are so corrupt or powerless, that the same proceedings are immediately renewed. Officers have been despatched to pull down sheds erected on interdicted places, and on the same day, on the departure of the police, the sheds have been put up again on the spot that was forbidden. Numberless are the abuses which the governor of Canton has endeavoured to suppress, but which no efforts of his can abolish, until he introduces the sweeping hand of reform among the magistrates, police, and government agents, who are the origin or the supporters of every corruption. An attentive observer may trace a gradual link of despotism through the whole population: the attainment of wealth seems the grand object of all classes, and the means by which it may be procured are considered not with regard to their propriety, but their possibility. The violent extortion of illegal fees, and the institution of false accusations, for the purpose of extorting money, called in the slang of the public offices, *planting a fir tree*, are carried on with impunity. Justice is but a shadow; wealth alone is power, for it alone will ensure toleration or protection; and yet it is often the means of its possessor falling a prey to the rapacity of the Government. A native, who had amassed considerable property as Comprador to an English mer-

chant, retired to his native place, near Macao, commonly called *Casa Branca*, and erected a house near the military station, which is surrounded by a fortified wall. The display of his wealth attracted the attention of the police, who, by permission of their superior, set about the discovery of some plan by which they might appropriate a portion of it to themselves. An old tree stood between his house and the wall; the Geomancer informed him the tree was unlucky, and by his suggestion, he directed its immediate removal. In cutting it down, however, it fell against the wall and carried away a part of it in its descent to the ground. He was accused of dilapidating his Majesty's fortifications; a prosecution was instituted, and he was ultimately deprived of some thousands of his dollars. Strangers are, of course, peculiarly liable to rapacity and imposition, seldom unattended by violence and insult from which the most respectable resident commercial agents are not exempt. Money obtained by these disreputable means is spent with folly, which surpasses the guilt by which it was procured. The natives who have thus enriched themselves, become purse-proud and insolent, indulging in all kinds of sensual extravagance. They fall in their turn a prey to the rapacity of the Government, which, by the aid of their own vices, soon reduces them to disgrace and beggary. The provinces of Shen-se and Shan-se have long been esteemed the most opulent in China; the natives boast of their possessions,

and compare their heaps of gold to mountains; the money-lenders of Canton are principally from these provinces. Towards the close of the reign of the late Emperor *Kea-King*, the son of a rich widow named *Chun*, of the district *Tae-yuen-foo*, rendered himself notorious by the lengths to which he carried his extravagance. Among his amusements, that of chess was a favourite; but not content with playing it on a piece of board or paper, as is customary with the Chinese, he caused a large room to be painted as a chess-board, with seats at either side for himself and friend. For *chess-men*, he purchased a set of beautiful female slaves, who were clad in various colours, and went through the evolutions of knights, pawns, castles, &c., as the game required, and according to a given signal. When a piece was lost, its representative immediately left the apartment. When the Emperor heard of these proceedings, he could scarcely contain his chagrin on finding himself outdone in luxury, and affected the highest displeasure that slaves should be purchased for such a questionable purpose. *Chun* was fined 3,000,000 of taels, and banished to the *Black Dragon River* for life, being told at the same time to congratulate himself that his "brain cup" was not separated from his shoulders.

Social ties are almost totally disregarded in China, save that between parent and child; and which is a bond rather of habit than affection. From the earliest age, obedience to parental authority is im-

pressed both by education and example; and the Government find very beneficial results from the power which they intrust to, or suffer in, parents, as they, thereby, in a great measure, extend or secure their own influence. *Keen-a-tseih*, was well known by the police as the leader in the daring robberies which had long occurred in the district of Pwan-yu, but he continued to elude the vigilant efforts which were made to secure him. Orders were issued by the Governor for his capture, at any hazard, and a reward of 3000 dollars was offered to any one who would cause his apprehension. The robber was aware that his father and mother would be seized, and compelled to inform against him, and sooner than permit them to suffer on his account, he gave himself up to the authorities. The policeman, to whom he delivered himself, received the promised reward, and being struck with the noble mindedness of Keen-a-tseih, he gave him a thousand dollars, for the benefit of his family after his execution. He was tried, found guilty, and condemned to death. A similar account is related of a Ladrone, who headed a band of pirates in a successful attack on How-qua's fort, which is situated between Canton and Whampoa. They removed the guns of the fort, which they plundered, having first cut off the ears of the captain, and the noses of the soldiers, who were there to defend it. The Ladrone then despatched the main body of his followers down the river, and proceeded afterwards himself, with but a few

attendants. The officers of the Government were made acquainted with his movements, but were afraid to pursue him, so great a panic did his name spread among them. His family, however, were seized, from the grandfather downwards, on hearing which, the robber immediately repaired to the house where they were detained, declaring that "it was unnecessary so many should die for one." The soldiers were still afraid to advance, on which he placed himself between them and his family, and drawing his knife, he stabbed himself, exclaiming that "they were now welcome to seize him." These circumstances will serve to illustrate the force of early impressions, which not even the acquaintance with numberless crimes can wholly eradicate.* Parental authority, winked at by the magistracy, is carried

* As a further illustration of social virtue amongst the Chinese, I may mention that early in the year 1828, four men who were returning home from a distant market, in a junk, were surprised by a gust of wind, and overturned in the water. Just as they were on the point of perishing, some English gentlemen, (Messrs. Jackson, Lindsay, and Astell) went to their assistance, and fortunately saved their lives. The gratitude of the Chinese was boundless. They voluntarily came to Canton and appeared before the above gentlemen to "knock head and worship an hundred times," and having received the subscription which had been raised for them, in consequence of the loss of their junk, they presented a thanksgiving document, full of the most extravagant expressions of admiration and gratitude; pledging themselves to erect gold lettered tablets in honour of their deliverers, to spread their names, and the fame of their virtues wherever they went. These instances of sound good feeling are, I regret to say, extremely rare amongst the Chinese.

sometimes to an extent that will surprise the English reader. Not long since, at the village of Chang-yuen, in the vicinity of Canton, there was a youth named *Lew*, of a depraved disposition, being addicted to thieving and other culpable practices. Constant complaints were made to his parents by their neighbours, and they, feeling themselves disgraced by him, and seeing no prospect of his amendment, agreed to put him to death, although he was their only son. Having formed this resolution, they passed a cord round his neck, and one pulling at each end, they at length strangled him. The affair was not at all concealed, and an old Chinese, who heard the circumstances related, declared his intention of using similar measures with his grandson, unless he speedily altered his conduct. The affair remained unnoticed by the authorities, as there was not any one to undertake a prosecution for the murder. Even parental power, so unrestrained, is sometimes insufficient to curb the vicious propensities which are so prevalent. The following petition, which is amusing from the peculiarity of its language, I annex with little alteration, save in the omission of words, which are not sufficiently delicate for insertion. "A mother's petition to the Nanhae magistrate against a dissolute son. A duly prepared petition. Wei-ping, the petitioner, is a widow in her 63d year, who lives at the Three-eyed-well, under the constablery of Tseang-tih-ping. The petition is concerning a rebellious son; and the

favour begged that he may be examined and corrected for the benefit of the public morals. The petitioner became a widow early in life. She had three sons. The eldest supports her by teaching to read. The youngest unhappily died early. But the middle one, A-keen-soo, has learned nothing for a subsistence. He is addicted to low pursuits—attends to no business—remains not in his proper sphere, but gambles, squanders my property, and sticks at nothing. I have directed my eldest son to admonish him with strictness, but he not only perseveres in his wickedness without remorse, but of late has learned to smoke opium, and has become more cruel and perverse than before. He has stolen every thing in the house to sell; and assails me every morning and evening for money. If I reprove or scold him a little, this rebel dares to stare with angry eyes, and rubs his fists as if going to fight. His wolfish heart and horrid conduct make my hairs stand on end. Unless I deliver him up to the magistrate to chastise him severely, some great calamity must eventually happen. Prostrate, I beg that he may be examined and chastised. Thus, though I should die, it will be like the year of my birth." This will, doubtless, remind the reader of juvenile delinquency in more civilized countries, where the prosecution of the child by the parent is, unhappily, not uncommon.

China is not without her moral writers, although it may be observed that but little attention is paid

to the precepts which they lay down. They are distinguished into two classes; the one, whose instructions are given, like those of Confucius, without any additional arguments of a religious nature: and the other, of more modern times, who make obedience to the gods the chief incentive to propriety of conduct. A writer of the latter school puts forth ten rules for moral observance.

1. Filial duties to parents.
2. The respect due to superiors.
3. Domestic harmony—especially between husband and wife.
4. The education of children.
5. The government of the family.
6. General behaviour to other people.
7. Great respect to the learned of the Confucian sect.
8. Quietly abiding contented in one's own station, whether scholar; agriculturist; mechanic or merchant; rich or poor.
9. The practice of virtuous deeds; &c.
10. Lastly, the avoidance of vicious ones.

The first in order and importance is filial piety. One of the arguments used to induce the observance of this rule is—the remembrance of the trouble and anxiety which parents have endured, especially the mother, who, it appears, like the Jewish mothers of old, is accustomed to nurse her children three years. The duty of the latter is to provide their parents with food and clothing, and

attend to their comforts whether in health or sickness. Entering into the married state does not release the son from the obligation, but rather extends it to the wife; disobedience, this writer observes, arises, in general, from a love of accumulation, and uxorious habits. In the second place, under the denomination of superiors, are classed elder brothers; seniors of one's kindred; teachers; magistrates; eminently virtuous men; country gentlemen; old men of the village, &c. He inveighs against the inattention with which etiquette and the distinctions of society are treated at present, and puts forth a few patriarchal hints upon this point. He advises inferiors to shew the respect, if walking, by keeping behind; if sitting, by taking their seats lower down; by kneeling when they ought to kneel, and bowing when they ought to bow; by standing when they answer a question, and doing what they are ordered with alacrity. In considering the proper observance of conjugal ties, he is gallant enough to take the part of the ladies, and to set down husbands as the originators of all domestic *désagrémens*: he makes certain allowances for disappointment in many cases, but bids the husband sooth himself with the reflection that he has been chosen out of millions, as the person to whom the lady was to be united by the destiny of a previous existence: he reminds him that she has forsaken her own parents to serve his; and that she has given up her own brothers and sisters to come and

compliment his brothers and sisters; after having entered into various arguments on this subject, he describes with minuteness, and lashes without reserve, the habits of the manifold bad husbands in China, whom he refers to Providence, to be dealt with according to their merits.

That his criminations are not groundless is shewn by a proclamation lately issued at Whampoa, to prevent the disorder into which the relations of wife and concubine were thrown by the husbands of that district. A wife "*tsei*" is distinguished as having been married by the gradual ceremony of customary presents. It would seem to be by no means unusual for wives and concubines to appear before the magistrates with mutual accusations, the one of cruelty, and the other of usurpation. According to the law, whoever puts his wife into the place of the latter, shall receive one hundred blows of a round cudgel; and, whilst his wife is alive, whoever permits her station to be usurped shall be punished with ninety blows from a similar weapon. The practice of separation for slight causes has obliged the criminal judge of Canton to issue a prohibitory proclamation against it, in which it is stated that want, brought on by love of gaming, and a lack of food and clothes, produces sometimes sudden repudiation, without regret. Prosperity has frequently a similar effect. The unfortunate wives are, in other instances, sold, to sing and play, or for more disgraceful purposes. The edict con-

cludes with the following denunciation. "If ye persist and reform not, it is resolved to prosecute with the utmost rigour of law. Under the luminous heaven, and renovating sun, of his Majesty's reign, it is impossible to endure you, ye wounders and destroyers of the public morals. Let each tremblingly obey this mandate, and not induce a too late repentance." There are seven occasions of the legality of a divorce; if it occur without one of them the offender subjects himself to a punishment of eighty blows; they are as follows: having no son; lewdness; not serving her husband's parents; *loquacity;* theft or robbery; envy or malice; disease. Some of these would, no doubt, be considered by European ladies as tyrannical infringements on their rights. The application of castigatory measures by either husband or wife, and wounding each other is also considered sufficient to entitle the party offended against to a separation. There are three cases, however, in which some of these legal causes cannot be alleged; during the three years mourning for the death of a parent; if the parties were first poor, and afterwards rich; and if the wife had no house to which she could return at the time of her marriage. A practice has lately become pretty general among the rich inhabitants of the North of China, of taking home the husband to the abode of his father-in-law, instead of sending the daughter to the house of her husband. Marriages have taken place between

the Chinese and Mohamedans in Western Tartary. No law exists for the punishment of persons engaged in these transactions; but the Supreme Court has lately ordered them, if detected in future, to be made public examples of, as the Chinamen, in these cases, abandon their tails and assume the Mussulman costume.

I will now revert to the fourth regulation of the moral writer already spoken of, which treats of the education of children, a subject of vital importance to society. In childhood, when impressions are strengthened by their novelty, care should be taken to engraft those principles which should form the character, and serve to steer by in the course of after life, when the storms of passion and the floods of temptation mingle in the track. Children, says he, are by nature, unpolished stone; an uncultivated field; and parents should become agriculturists and lapidaries. He looks upon the indulgence of parents as the source of many evils, and advocates the early commencement of instruction and a consistency of method. The choice of companions is a chief consideration: "if you touch vermilion," he observes, "it will make the part red; if you touch ink it will make it black." In speaking of the education of girls, he enlarges on the unfortunate consequences of their not being taught self-control, from the absence of which, in after years, they frequently destroy themselves, or those around them, in fits of ungovernable passion. To rule

a family well, he suggests the necessity of residing in a virtuous neighbourhood, where children are not only free from the contamination of vice, but may receive the benefits resulting from their witnessing the practice of virtue and morality. He decries a residence near Buddha temples; the mansions of the wealthy; and rivers' banks. The best aspect of a house is described as the south, the next east, then north, and finally the west. Servants are quite as depraved as those above them; it would indeed be strange did they neglect to emulate the vices of their superiors. Espionage is not only a system of the Government, but of private adoption, and servants are generally made the willing instruments: they become the spies of the merchants or of the police, as occasion may require, or as the ratio of profit may hold out to them inducements. I have heard of an old Chinese, who, in straining every nerve for the attainment of a governorship, invited the servant of a foreigner to dine with him, and treated him with perfect equality, to obtain information from him which he thought would answer his purpose.

Gambling in China is carried to an unprecedented extent; and has obtained so firm a footing, and spread so widely among the people, that the laws enacted for its suppression are attended with results deplorably futile. The universality of this destructive vice, a peculiar characteristic of which is to gain strength, and influence, in proportion to the ill suc-

cess of its votaries, may account in a great measure for the dishonest and shuffling habits of the people in all commercial transactions in which they are engaged. The general existence of a propensity, so calculated to destroy all the better feelings of humanity, leaves us to regret the misery it occasions, while we hail it as a landmark in our survey of the moral character of the people. The *canaille* in the streets commonly convert their petty purchases at the small stalls into mere games of hazard, risking the whole amount of the stake for the chance of increasing the quantity of the article which they desire to obtain. But the vice is not confined to the lower orders: the keepers of gaming-houses in Canton are frequently individuals of rank and property, who enter into alliances to entrap the unwary, and inveigle young men of property into a love of play. Instances are to be found of the *gentler* sex becoming members of such establishments, and sharers in the tolerated plunder they produce. The penal liabilities are the confiscation of all the property found in a gaming-house as well as the house itself, and the punishment of eighty blows to be inflicted on all who play for either money or goods. To play for food or liquors is not considered an offence. Not long since, the names of some noted gamesters were published and held up for general observation; more with a view to caution the simple than to disgrace the offenders. Amongst them we find

the cognomen of Fei-ching-po, who is described as a fat old lady, seventy years of age, in robust health, and a scientific boxer. She retained in her service several pugilists, who attended her as bullies. Other names are given of persons, with whom the art of self-defence, (with them, doubtless, more frequently the art of offence,) is held in great requisition. This "science" is universally taught and practised in China, although the local governments do not give it their sanction. They have no pitched battles, but they frequently put forth pamphlets, in which the necessary instructions are given, clothed in terms of the most fanciful description. The first lesson consists of the learner's winding his tail tight round his head; stripping himself to the buff; putting his right foot foremost, and thrusting his right fist with all his force against a bag of sand, suspended for the purpose. He is to change his hands and feet alternately and continue *punishing* the bag of sand for hours together. This is termed by the "Fancy"—"thumping down walls and overturning parapets." The second lesson is called "A golden dragon thrusting out his claws," which is performed in the following manner: the pugilist grasps in each hand a heavy stone, wrought into the form of a Chinese lock, these he practises thrusting out at his arm's length, right and left alternately, until fatigue obliges him to discontinue the operation. These are succeeded by other feats, whose titles are equally figurative and appropriate;

such as "A crow stretching out his wings.—A dragon issuing forth from his den.—A drunken Chinaman knocking at your door.—A sphinx spreading her wings.—A hungry tiger seizing a lamb.—A hawk clawing a sparrow.—A crane and a muscle reciprocally embarrassed:"—terms, which, it must be acknowledged, would not have disgraced the age of the gladiators.

The frequent recurrence of suicide in Canton is at the same time a proof, and a consequence, of the demoralization which so generally exists; it is a melancholy demonstration of the weakness, both mental and bodily, which prevails among the inhabitants. A silly ambition, "to make light of life," has crept among them; and the most insignificant causes frequently occasion the commission of self-destruction. It is calculated that eight or nine-tenths of the untimely deaths which come under the notice of the authorities, are caused by suicide, and of these, six or seven-tenths are perpetrated by women. Trivial disputes and the irritation of the moment, the discontent occasioned by the poverty of their circumstances, sullen impatience of reproof, and the dread of sustaining the punishment entailed by violation of the laws, are often the origin of these rash and fatal deeds. It is, also, not unfrequently the case, that persons destroy themselves, from a desire to throw suspicion upon those who may have been the objects of their resentment, and thereby involve them, if possible, in their death. A pertinacious adherence to

bad customs, and the impressions made by legendary tales, lend their aid in inducing the disregard of life, which is looked upon as meritorious by the female branches. Young women form themselves into sisterhoods, and repining at their destiny, which give them existence *as women*, repair in numbers to a river, where they resign themselves simultaneously into the arms of death. A proclamation was recently put forth by the celebrated Judge Yaou, "prohibiting the wicked and foolish custom of terminating one's own existence." As the arguments which he uses, however, are purely of a legal or social nature, without any reference to a future responsibility, it is not probable that they would meet with the effect intended. He does not extend his reasoning to the fear of incurring the Divine wrath, by sinfully resigning that life which is the gift, and at the disposal of Heaven; the importance of which consideration is alike unthought of by himself, and those whose crime his remarks are intended to deprecate. Without the enforcement of religious persuasion, he is not likely to decrease the numbers of the offenders, who, by commission of the act, against which he exclaims, abandon all earthly ties; and, in the blindness of their last crime, fling themselves into the presence of the offended Deity.

From the consideration of the morality of the Chinese, to that of their police regulations and criminal law, is a natural, though not a very pleasing step. It may be inferred from the remarks

already made, that the persons, in whose hands the executive power is placed, make an invariable practice of abusing the trust which is reposed in them, and consider the office which they hold, solely with a view to their own aggrandizement, without consulting the legality of the means by which they may effect it. To the Governor of a province, or the lowest 'runner' of the police, these observations are equally applicable. Even the very fountain-head of Government is not free from pollution; much as they may affect surprise and indignation at the frequent instances of misrule, and often as they declare their determination to make summary examples of the magistrates whose corruption they witness, it is pretty evident, that they are willing to wink at all abuses, provided they can render them the means of increasing the revenue. The police are in the habit of arresting rich individuals under false accusations, and confining them in private houses, or the hold of a boat, where they are subjected to torture and ill treatment of various kinds, to induce them to pay for their liberation. The constancy with which these illegal acts are repeated, arises, no doubt, from the popular conviction of the inutility of appealing to the authorities above them. In the exaction of disallowed fees, chiefly on the occasion of collecting the land-tax, the Government agents will give themselves slight cuts on the head or elsewhere, and then threaten to impeach, for wounding his Majesty's officers, a capital offence, from the accusation of which, individuals

think themselves fortunate in escaping, by submission to a considerable levy. The combination between the police runners and thieves, is notorious, and is the cause of the daily increase of every description of spoliation. They either participate in the plunder, or seize them and exact a certain sum to set them at liberty. When the frequency of crime renders the arrest of offenders absolutely unavoidable, the police, for the sake of appearances, bring before the magistrates old delinquents who had nothing to do with the robbery in question, while they permit the actual offenders to go about undisturbed. Woo-King-Hang, in representing this state of things to his Majesty, recommends the adoption of the following plan to ensure the honesty of the police. He would require all the courts to send in, twice a year, authenticated lists of the thieves informed against, together with the names of all who were taken or had effected their escape. He would thereby be enabled to appreciate the diligence or remissness of the functionaries in the respective districts. Information was lately given to the Governor of the movements of an opium smuggler, called a "Fast-Going Crab Boat," which the revenue cutters were ordered to seize within six days, or render themselves liable to certain penalties. Being unsuccessful in their attempts to take her, they caused one to be fitted up precisely like her, sent her outside the harbour, and, after a pursuit and sham fight, they seized her and reported

her capture, as the smuggler in question, within the time allowed. The Magistrates are quite as corrupt and self-interested as the police. Their inattention to their official duties is a frequent cause of complaint to the Emperor. It would appear, that they are in the habit of resorting to the Governor's, whenever they can find an opportunity or an excuse for paying their respects to him, while they leave the transaction of the public business in the hands of inefficient or irresponsible persons, if not altogether neglected. Some of them entirely absent themselves, till, by their assiduities, they obtain from the Governor the appointment to some more lucrative post. The Governor, whose duty it is to pay his own secretaries, fills up those situations with the officers of his province who are paid for attending to other employments, and do not seek any emolument from him: they take care, however, to make the people their pay-masters, or reckon on the influence of the Governor in the attainment of something more to their advantage. At other times he raises his own creatures from the lowest grades to the temporary occupation of respectable offices, during their continuance in which, they cause all who come within their grasp to submit to the most disgraceful extortion.

Associations for plunder are so numerous and powerful, that neither by land nor water are the people safe from attack. Bands of pirates infest the rivers; and, under pretence of being custom-house

searchers, board and plunder every trading boat that comes within their reach; even Government boats do not meet with the least respect or distinction, but are frequently plundered in spite of the officers who attend them. The conveyance of goods, by land, is equally dangerous, and carriers are so frequently waylaid under similar pretences, that the Magistrates have recently issued an order that no native is to be searched on his passage from one place to another. Persons making an attempt to search, except at some public pass, or custom-house, may be seized and carried before a Magistrate, being threatened with death, upon conviction. If they be armed, and the death of any of them ensue in the resistance which is made, the slayer is declared free from all liability of punishment. The farmers are laid under heavy contributions by the bands of robbers, who, in most instances, succeed in exacting from them a tribute to entitle them to security: in harvest-time, their attacks are of a very serious nature, whole crops being cut down, and often destroyed in the most wanton manner. The military and police are consequently ordered, at the time of reaping, to patrol by land and water, and protect the interests of the agriculturists. The punishment for stealing cattle used in agriculture, is the infliction of 100 blows and transportation: those who kill and sell their own cattle, incur the same penalty. The robberies at night are committed by persons who prowl about on the roofs of the houses, and the

Magistrate advises the inhabitants to provide themselves with spears and hooks, fastened to shafts twelve cubits in length, to enable them to reach from roof to roof in pursuing the thieves. The use of fire-arms loaded with ball or shot, is forbidden, but grains of *hard paddy* are permitted as a substitute for the latter; "because," says the Magistrate, "while I would detect thieves, I would save lives." In consequence of the difficulty of recovering property, even after the arrest of the plunderers, and to induce landlords to inquire into the character of their tenants, it is ordered, that all houses, in which stolen goods are found, shall become the property of the informer. In a Proclamation by the Whampoa Magistrate, he states, that the prevalence of such enormities in his district, argues an unusual contempt of the law: he therefore threatens the robbers, that henceforward on taking them, he will cut the tendons of their feet, and then bring them to trial and punish them without the slightest mercy. He concludes with the following exhortation:—"Let this strike your eye, O ye thieves, and affect your heart! Reform your depraved manners, and return to a right course: don't with levity use your bodies to make an experiment!" The practices of raising incendiary fires for the sake of plunder; receiving stolen goods; exacting money from farmers and fishermen for tickets of security; and taking the oaths of illegal associations; are severally inveighed against in other proclamations. In Canton, where the exer-

tions of the police were much more energetic than elsewhere, the number of undecided cases in court, in December, 1828, were no less than 430, in which informations were laid against 2100 banditti, who were still untaken. Judge Yaou, feeling the incompetency of the police to apprehend the offenders, held out to them promises of pardon, or mitigation of punishment, in case they delivered themselves up, or were instrumental in arresting any of their companions. Those who were guilty of murder, arson, violation, or maiming the masters of houses, were not permitted to avail themselves of this very politic clemency. The lives of those who wounded people were to be spared, in case those who were wounded recovered, and information laid by the family of an offender, would be as effective as his voluntary surrender, in procuring a mitigation of punishment. The inability of the Magistrates to put down the lawless proceedings just enumerated, is such, that it is a part of their policy to wink at those doings over which they have little or no control. The inhabitants are consequently obliged to form themselves into counter-associations for general protection. These are maintained by subscriptions, voluntary and assessed, and each member is engaged to make his appearance on the sound of the tocsin, and render all the assistance in his power. Among the annoyances of which they complain, are the disturbances caused by fellows who either are, or pretend to be, drunk,

and the importunities of sturdy beggars, who make a practice of extorting charity by threats and intimidation. On occasions of loss of property, concubines, children, &c., it is usual to stick manuscript advertisements against the walls for their recovery, one of which I annex—no bad specimen of the general style of such productions :—

" CHAMG-CHAOU-LAI, who issues this thanksgiving advertisement, lives outside the south gate, in Great Tranquillity Lane, where he has opened an incense smoking musquito shop. On the evening of the 12th instant, two of his fellow workmen, in the shop, Ne-ahung and Atik, employed a stupifying drug, which by its fumes sunk all the partners in a deep sleep, during which they robbed the shop of all the money, clothes, &c. which they could carry away. Next morning when the partners awoke no trace was to be found of these two men. If any good people know where they are, and will give information, a thank's offering in flowery red paper of four dollars will be presented. If both the booty and the two men be seized, and delivered over at my little shop, then dollars will be presented. Decidedly I will not eat my words. This advertisement is true.

" Ne-ahung is about 20 years of age, short stature, has a white face and no beard. Atik, whose surname is not remembered, is upwards of 20 years of age, is tall, has a sallow face, and no beard. Reign of Taou-kwang, 9th year, 9th moon, 3rd day."

The practice of kidnapping children is very common in Canton. The majority of them are removed to a distance and sold * for slaves, or play-actors: the female children are often disposed of for purposes which cause us to deplore the extreme imbecility of those who permit such practices to continue. The following is an extract from a prohibitory edict on the subject, one of the many which are annually issued, as a matter of form, and which are, doubtless, attended with as much effect on the minds of the people, as "preaching to the winds." "Such wicked wretches as these, who distress our streets, and torment our children are most deserving of *intense hatred.* I the magistrate on examining cases of appeal about children who have not yet been restored, have found a clue which I shall hasten to unfold by secret means, in order to remove this calamity from the people. Beside employing these efforts I hereby issue a severe interdict against all such practices, and solemnly enjoin all soldiers and people to obey implicitly the laws, and to use their efforts to be good. Be sedulously careful not to kidnap children, and thereby commit a great crime.

* In times of scarcity, the poor are sometimes reduced to the distressing alternative of either selling their children, or seeing them perish for want. On these occasions, many parents go about Canton leading their own children through the streets, offering them for sale. In such cases, the purchaser is required to give a written promise that he will provide for the child, treat it well, &c. One instance is mentioned of a little girl, six years of age, being sold for twenty-five dollars.

I have already seized the kidnappers Luh-a-kae, Choo-te-han, Lea-ching, Taou-a-kew and others; all of whom have been thrown into prison, and according to law, sentenced to be strangled. You ought to consider them a mirror, showing whither your former course leads. Do not for the sake of petty gains, use your bodies to make experiments on the law. Let every one yield implicit obedience hereto. Offend not."

Before the reign of the first actual Emperor, *Tsin-che-Hwang-Te*, 200 years B. C., the several states of the empire possessed their respective laws and usages. The first compilation of a general code is attributed to *Le-Kwei* of the principality *Wei:* he revised the statutes of the various states which composed the empire, and divided the selection which he made into six sections. Upon the usurpation of the throne by *Tsin*, this code was still maintained by his prime-minister *Shang-Keun*. It underwent many alterations at this time, and was increased by new enactments, concocted by several lawyers whose names are historically recorded. The law of punishment was still exceedingly unsettled, and was made the subject of continual discussion; capital punishment being advocated by some, whilst others endeavoured to support the ancient system of maiming. On the close of the *Tsin* dynasty, in the seventh century, this code was continued by the *Han* family, whose minister *Seaou-ho* caused it to submit to further and repeated alterations; the six sections

of *Le-Kwei* had already increased to upwards of nine hundred, and the attendant commentaries of the lawyers were so profuse and contradictory, that an equitable decision in criminal cases could not be arrived at, without the consultation of twenty-six thousand two hundred and seventy-two clauses. The record of sentences, made at this period, shews them to have been no less than seven millions, seven hundred and thirty-two thousand, two hundred. *Jow-hing*, or "flesh punishment," by cutting off any part of the body, has been discontinued of late years, and is not permitted by the reigning family, with the exception of cutting the tendon achilles. The punishments at present in use are the bastinado, transportation, and death, inflicted in proportion to the several degrees and species of crime. However, there are three modes of putting the latter sentence into execution: first, by strangulation, which is deemed the easiest and least disgraceful form of inflicting death, because it preserves the body entire (the victim is strangled on an upright cross, on the transverse beam of which, his arms are stretched out); second, by decapitation; and, third, by cutting the body into pieces.

The following case of homicide may serve as a specimen of the severe nature of the laws in China, and at the same time shew the *great clemency* of his Imperial Majesty.

"Wang-ke-fuh, a husbandman, of the province of Gan-hwuy, on coming home from the field, told his wife to boil some water, and make him a cup of

tea. She was busy at the mill, pounding wheat, and had not time to make him tea. At this he was vexed, and reproved her harshly. But instead of submitting, she answered again, and disputed with him. Wang-ke-fuh then got into a passion and ran towards her to chastise her. She ran to the cook-house, and he seized an earthenware tea-pot to throw at her head. She evaded it, and his old mother at that instant put forth her head to make peace, and received the blow on her temple. He had all his life been a dutiful son, and he immediately rendered what assistance he could, and called for a doctor to his wounded mother, but she died in consequence of the stroke. The kindred agreed to treat it as an accident, and prepared a coffin to inter the remains; but the authorities heard of it and seized the son. He was tried, and confessed all he had done; but declared that there was no quarrel with his mother, nor any intention to hurt her. However, he was sentenced to be cut in pieces. His case was referred to the Emperor, who sent it to the Criminal Board, and they recommended a mitigation of the sentence, but their lenity only extended to changing it for decapitation."

The Chinese laws on homicides are as follows:— They are called the "*Luh sha*, or six modes of killing man. 1. *Mow sha*, by previous design, whether an individual plots with his own heart, or with companions. 2. *Koo sha*, by instant design, wilful at the moment, though unpremeditated. This is Chinese 'wilful murder,' but English 'manslaughter.'

3. *Gow sha*, by fighting in an affray; chance-medley. 4. *He sha*, by dangerous sports; such as boxing, cudgelling, &c. Duelling would of course be included, as a rather dangerous 'gentlemanly' play. 5. *Woo sha*, by mishap, hitting and killing the wrong person; one with whom you had no quarrel, and to whom you intended no hurt. The persons found guilty of any of these crimes, are, by law, punished with 'death,' some immediate, others after imprisonment. 6. *Kwoshih sha*, killing by misadventure, by pure accident; as a hatchet flying off from its haft. This is censured as carelessness, but not considered a capital crime. But Chinese law, even in homicides, depends much on the station and rank of the two parties. A master killing his slave, and a slave killing his master, are very differently punished."

The penal code, entitled *Lew-Le*, consists of two sections; the *Lew*, which is the original draft or framework of the law, and the *Le*, or modern portion, comprising all the alterations and explanations which have been recently made, and which were commenced during the *Ming* dynasty, which preceded that at present on the throne. The reigning Emperor has ordered a revision of the laws to be made every five years, the last edition to be substituted for all previous enactments. Here, as in ancient Rome, when the meaning of the law is doubtful, the case is referred, by writing, to the Emperor for his opinion; and his rescripts, or decisions, bear the impress and weight of laws, until it

may please himself or his successors to annul them by any subsequent act. The edicts of local governors are allowed the same authority as laws, and many of the regulations which affect both foreign and domestic commerce have no other origin. Villages are in general guided by prescriptive regulations, which the influential portion of the inhabitants compel the rest to observe. In China the judge may sit to hear causes, either by night or by day, in private or in public, as it suits himself; counsel are not allowed in court, though the parties take care to provide themselves in secret. Appeal to a higher tribunal is, consequently, the only check upon the courts, who are careful, however, that the records which they keep, lean to their own side of the question. Even in case of defeat, in any disputed point with foreigners, they are sure to attribute to their own peculiar goodness and mercy that which they were obliged to concede.

The persevering exertions of Chinese widows in seeking judicial revenge for the death of their husbands is a trait in their character which excites peculiar admiration, in the dearth of fortitude and feeling which their country exhibits. I annex the appeal of the widow of an officer named Selim-paou, who was supposed to have met with a violent death. "I am now fifty-three years of age. My husband on a former occasion went forth from the fragrant mountain to suppress an insurrection in Hoo-kwang, and received from the Emperor the

honour of being nominated one of the Body-guard. He again went forth to Cashgar, and for his military services received the honour of a Peacock's feather, and was promoted to be a member of Military Council. During the first moon of the eighth year, I received a letter informing me that during the eleventh moon of the seventh year, my husband left Cashgar, and having travelled as far as Gan-se, he there sickened and died. I was then at Sze-chuen, and waited on the TE-TUH, who told me not to wait for the coffined remains of my husband, but that he would give me 4000 taels to enable me to return to my native Clan. I heard, however, a rumour that my husband was put to death by stratagem; others said he was suffocated, and therefore I would not accept the money, but demanded the coffined remains. This the Te-tuh would not grant, and I was compelled to apply to the Tartar General at Sze-chuen, and to the Governor of the Province, none of whom would pay attention to me, but instead of granting redress wrote to the Military Board, that I had become mad; and directed my husband's younger brothers to take me home to my native Clan. During the fifth moon of the present year I arrived at Gan-se, and in a Temple outside the North gate, found a coffin with my husband's title and name upon it. I removed it to the provincial city, and in consequence of the Government coffin being made of thin wood, I had a shell made for it. During the ninth

moon I arrived with it at my own home. Having cut away the cords with which it was bound, I opened the lid, and myself inspected the corpse. My husband's two eyes were dug out; his mouth was open; his face black, and the whole body bound round with cloth. On his forehead was a wound several inches long made with a sharp instrument. It had been stuffed with cotton. The marks of blood were black; and when touched with the hand were yet moist. When I saw these things my distress was indescribable and I did not dare to look at any other part. I seek revenge for this mysterious death."

This petition was forwarded to the Emperor, and orders were immediately given to the Criminal Board to inquire minutely into the circumstances.

Cutting off a Chinaman's tail is one of the greatest insults that can be offered him, and is, moreover, considered excessively unlucky: it is looked upon as *petit* murder, and punished accordingly. Among the uses to which wealth is put, that of procuring substitutes for murderers is one of the most extraordinary, though not the most uncommon; indeed the lengths to which depravity is carried is scarcely credible. A belief is prevalent among the lower orders, that the gall of a human being is very beneficial in supplying that courage which nature or education has neglected to bestow; it is therefore in great requisition among the cowardly—a very considerable portion of the

people: the plan which they adopt is that of steeping grains of rice in the gall, and eating them when they are dry. Torture, to extort the confession of guilt, or for the extension of punishment, is permitted by the laws of China, to a certain extent: the avarice or cruelty of the magistrates is frequently the cause, not only of its illegal application, but of its infliction, to a degree totally unwarranted by the laws. It is not unfrequently the case that the death of the victim to a false accusation ensues from the despotism of the local authorities, whose introduction of new penalties and edicts is sanctioned by the Government. The compression of the ancles of men, and of the fingers of women, between blocks of wood, is the method most commonly used; though many other contrivances, suggested by the cruelty of the magistrates, are often put into practice. Flogging through the public streets is inflicted in a most unmerciful manner: the arms of the offender are tied behind his back, while the executioner holding the end of the cord, lashes him forward to the measured sound of a gong. The instrument of punishment is a whip of plaited thongs, the bamboo, or split rattan.

The arrangements in the prisons of Canton, are of the most irregular and partial nature; the wealthy, without reference to the character or degree of their offences, may command every luxury and convenience which their means can procure, or of which their confinement will admit; amusements,

attendants, and private apartments may all be ensured, if they have but the money to purchase them; and they are released from the necessity of wearing their chains, except while the ceremony of going the rounds is in performance. The poorer criminals are, on the other hand, reduced to the most pitiable condition, and subject to the infliction of every annoyance which the barbarity of their jailors can devise. If they are unable to pay for "burnt offerings" (of paper) to the God of the Jail, they are hung up and flogged without mercy, and with little hope of redress; at night they are chained down to a board, by the neck, wrists, and ancles, amidst the most disgusting filth, and exposed to the attacks of rats, which are permitted to congregate without molestation: such is the horror inspired by this place of unlawful torture, that it is generally known by the name of *Te-yuk*, which is equivalent to our word Hell, in its worst acceptation. The private prisons, in which the police confine persons whom they arrest on false charges, for the purpose of extorting money, are conducted in a similar way: those who resist their demands from inability and disinclination, being frequently starved to death, or destroyed by the ill usage they receive. There are also jails for women, under the *surveillance* of female police, who compel their prisoners, by continued ill treatment, to submit to the most dissolute habits, that they may share the profit of their infamy. In

Canton, criminal executions are more frequent than in any other province in China. The usual modes are beheading, and strangulation; but on an occasion of peculiar enormity, the condemned is cut to pieces, and his head exposed in a cage at the top of a pole, to make a suitable impression on the minds of the multitude. The last is the method invariably adopted in case of a rebellion, and the market-place is the spot chosen to carry the law into effect. The criminal is dressed in the best clothes he can procure, and kneels with his face in the direction of the imperial throne, as an acknowledgment of the justice of his sentence. Being the last male of a family is considered sufficient to exempt from capital punishment.

CHAP. VI.

Fine Arts—Printing—The Drama—Jealousy of the Chinese—Port and Measurement Duties—Sources of the Revenue—Expenditure—Production and Manufacture of Silk—Emigration—Trades' Unions—Opium—Tea—Restrictions on Foreigners—Slavery—Blind Mendicants—Charitable Institutions—Foreigners Travelling in China.

THE fine arts, which seldom prosper under the baneful influence of a despotism, meet with but little encouragement in China. The artists of Canton, however poor their abilities may be, are still superior to those of any other part of the empire, in consequence of the facility afforded them of meeting with foreign paintings. Not long since, some ink drawings were made at Peking, of engagements in the late war with the Rebel Changkihur; these were presented to the Emperor, who forwarded them to Canton, to form the subjects of paintings by the artists of that city. The English were, at the same time, requested to engrave the drawings on copper, from which it is inferred, that the art of engraving on copper is unknown amongst them, or they would not have thus admitted the superiority of the "barbarian" foreigners. *Keinlung*, the grandfather of the present Emperor, was obliged to have recourse to France for engravings of his victories over the Gorkas. The books of the

Chinese are frequently embellished with *wood-cuts*, to which, in their hyperbolical fashion, they invariably give the title of copper plates.

The application of metal types to the Chinese characters was first made in the reign of the Emperor *Kung-he*. They were held in such estimation by *Kien-lung*, that he gave them the appellation of "congregated pearls." Wooden types are also in use, but neither description of *moveable* types has ever been carried to any degree of perfection, which is attributed to the difficulty they cause of tracing the publication of any offensive work to the printer; the Governors, consequently, are accustomed to prohibit the use of them, and thus throw an almost insurmountable obstacle in the path to knowledge. Stereotype, on the contrary, not affording the opportunities of evasion, is treated with greater leniency, and is generally employed. The printing, which is thus produced by means of wooden blocks, is much neater than that afforded by the "congregated pearls." The Chinese have no public newspapers, if we except the "Imperial Gazette" at Peking, and the circulars of provincial Governors, which are issued daily, but are scarcely deserving of that title. Their contents are confined to accounts of the visits which the Governor pays and receives—the arrivals and departures of official personages—the despatch of treasure boats to Peking—and a brief treatment of fires and executions. The naked facts are given, unaccompanied by any remarks

which might tend either to the instruction or amusement of the reader. The present Emperor, notwithstanding the unhappy condition to which knowledge is necessarily reduced by the iron grasp of despotism, does not evince a total disregard to the progress of literature. On the occasion of his visiting the ancient capital Mougden, the "affluent metropolis," he treated the literati with great distinction, made ample additions to their funds, and permitted the election of an increased number of graduates. In the examination of Russian official students at Peking, his Majesty provided them with a theme, and examined the essays which they produced on the occasion. He bestowed, at the same time, considerable rewards on two Chinese literati, for the correctness and facility with which they translated some Russian documents.

The drama is a popular source of amusement in China; it is not, however, rendered the medium of enlightening the minds or improving the manners of the people, but may be looked upon as a mirror in which their vices are reflected with an accuracy truly degrading. A law exists by which the representation on the stage of emperors, empresses, sages, and gods, is deemed illegal, from the tendency which such representations would have, to bring the aforesaid personages into contempt. Individuals, offending in this way, are liable to the punishment of one hundred blows and a month at the pillory. In the teeth of this edict, however, the highest authorities

in the empire are daily in the habit of witnessing such personations, among which the Supreme Deity of China is frequently introduced.

The intercourse of foreign nations with the Chinese is carried on under every disadvantage, which their ignorant pride and vain confidence in their own resources can suggest. But the readiness with which they yield to every strenuous opposition to their exclusive measures, while it points out the weakness of their character, affords a convincing proof of the prejudicial consequence of too pliant a submission to their jealous regulations. Foreigners, whom they entitle *barbarians*, are invariably treated as inferiors, and the lowest of the people are incited by the language and representations of their Governors to conduct themselves with insolence, and even violence. All commercial transactions are, or rather ought to be, caried on with the Hong merchants, who are appointed by and give security to the Government. The strangers, who reside in Canton, for the arrangement and furtherance of trade, are obliged to lodge in the Factories of the Hongs, who are particularly enjoined to prevent the slightest intercourse with the rest of the natives. Notwithstanding their injunctions, a clandestine trade is carried on, to a very great extent, with native shopmen, who maintain their intercourse under pretence of belonging to the merchants' establishments, in which they are countenanced by the Hongs, for the sake of evading the duties. The latter frequently

incur the displeasure of Government, by not coming to a speedy settlement with foreigners, by which they are induced to remain in the country much longer than they deem necessary. Sometimes the native shopmen evade the law by bribing the linguists to report the duties in the names of the Hongs; this is eventually a source of great injury to the merchants, from the accumulation of duties which the shopmen neglect to discharge. Indeed it is said that the greater number of these Hongs, from various causes, terminate their existence in distress.

The exorbitant duties, and other heavy expenses which are incurred by vessels arriving at Canton, occasion the practice of smuggling and illegal evasion, which, blameable as they doubtless are, lose some of their enormity when we consider the despotic and vexatious regulations which are sought to be avoided. In addition to the port dues, every vessel, without distinction of tonnage, is subjected to the payment of a 'present' of 1600 taels, from which, together with the exaction of linguist and Comprador's fees, amounting to 473 dollars, the smallest vessel is not exempt. To escape these arbitrary imposts, many ships contrive to receive their cargoes without entering either of the ports—Canton or Macao. This they are enabled to accomplish with impunity, from the facilities which the natives afford them. A vessel, whose sole lading is rice, is admitted without the exaction of any port dues;

a regulation which shews a very laudable anxiety on the part of the Government, to secure, at a cheap rate, to the poorer classes, a commodity of such general consumption.

The Port Dues in China are levied upon the measurement of the vessel, which is ascertained by taking the length, from the mizen mast to the fore-mast; and the breadth from the two gangways, then multiplying the results together and dividing by 10.

The arrangement is into three classes.

1st class, on all vessels measuring 150 cubits and upwards.

2nd class, 120 to 150.

3rd class, 120 and under.

And the duty is as follows, viz.

	Taels.	m.	c.	c.	decs.
1st class .	7	8	7	4	755 per cubit
2nd class .	7	2	3	1	910 ditto.
3rd class .	5	0	6	2	335 ditto.

The Present on all classes of English vessels are alike, viz. 1600 taels, 6m. 8c. 3c.; but on French ships, 100 taels more.

EXAMPLES.

Fort William, 1st Class.

		Taels	m.	c.	c.	decs.	Taels.	m.	c.	c.
Length, 89—5 / Breadth, 29—4	263 1 3—	7	8	7	4	755—	2072	0	8	4
	Present,						1600	6	8	3
	Taels,						3672	7	6	7
	At 72 per ct. Sp. Dolls.						5101	66		cents.

Good Success, 2nd Class.

	Taels. m. c. c. decs.	Taels. m. c. c.
Length, 67—5 / Breadth, 22—	148 5 1—7 2 3 1 910—	1073 9 3 9
Present,	-	1600 6 8 3
Taels,	-	2674 6 2 2
At 72 ct. per Sp. Dols.		3714 75 cents.

Agnes, 3rd Class.

Length, 58—4 / Breadth, 18—4	107 4 5 6—5 0 6 2 335—	543 9 7 9
Present,	-	1600 6 8 3
Taels,	-	2144 6 6 2
At 72 per ct. Sp. Dolls.		2978 70 cents.

The cubit is the Chinese covid, equal to 14,625 decs. inches.

The Board of Revenue, at Canton, entitled *Hoopoo*, derives its income through a variety of channels, which may be enumerated as follows. The land-tax; tax on salt (a monopoly of the Government); a tax on grain has been adopted and relinquished at different periods according to the diverse views of statesmen, or the exigencies of the people; it was repealed by Kang-he, to benefit the latter, and renewed soon after, in consequence of an intimation that the corn-dealers alone profited by the repeal; fisheries, deeds of houses and lands, are also subject to a levy; as well as all provinces in which the precious metals are obtained; duties on the conveyance of goods through the different parts of the empire; in licenses for the sale of reeds,

tea, and ginseng, which it is a capital crime to collect without a license; the sale of honorary distinctions, and the right to wear the appropriate badges, is another means of increasing the revenue; on occasions of emergency, other methods are resorted to, such as the sale of commissions, and the levy of contributions from companies of merchants and other bodies. With these resources, the following is the expenditure to be met. The incomes of the Kings, Princes, Princesses, and Nobles of the Imperial Clan; the pay of civil and military officers; the army and navy; the building and repair of national works, canals, and bridges; and the expenses caused by the frequent inundations of the Yellow River; largesses also are given to meritorious divisions of the army; and bounties to the poor when distress is caused by excessive rains, flights of locusts, famine, or drought. The expenses of his Majesty are not stated in the Chinese work from which the foregoing particulars are taken.

Of the articles just enumerated, the high duty on salt, and tea, renders them most frequently the object of interior smuggling; the punishment of a contraband disposal of tea is the infliction of the wooden collar for three months, and subsequent transportation. The quicksilver imported into China is used in producing vermilion, in which shape it is exported to Europe and India, and is also forwarded in considerable quantities to Peking,

Nan-king, and Soo-chow. Quicksilver is likewise a production of China, whence it has been occasionally exported to England. One fourth of the lead imported into China is said to be used in lining the tea-chests, &c., which is sent to England alone. The camphor tree, which grows in the forests near Chin-chew, yields an important article in Chinese commerce. It is generally conveyed to Canton by the junks: as no ship laden with tea is permitted to take camphor on board, that portion of it intended for England is usually sent by Singapore; it is transmitted also to India, from which, however, the greater part of it is ultimately consigned to Europe. The camphor tree of Canton does not supply gum, but the timber is in great requisition, and is used in manufacturing trunks, which are disposed of to the ships that constantly arrive there. Sugar is produced in the Southern provinces, from which it is conveyed to all the other parts of the Empire. The chief exportation is made to Bombay, both in the raw state, and in candy.

Silk, which is produced in the different provinces, in various quantities and in great diversity of texture, is collected in Kwang-tung, in seven *crops*, commencing in the 4th moon, or May, and repeated at intervals of a month until the 10th or 11th moon. The nature of the first crop is no criterion whatever, as to that of those which succeed it; they are solely affected by the state of the weather and the relative health of the insect. The second and third

crops are, consequently, much superior to the rest, as the settled period of the year, at which they are collected, is highly favourable to their production. In the province of Nan-king, there are but two crops which are gathered in the 6th, 7th, and 8th moons, the first being far superior in quality to the other, and yielded in greater plenty. Tsat-lee and Tay-saam are the titles by which they are distinguished; but under these denominations great varieties are found, to be attributed to the care observed in their preparation as well as to the season. The Tsat-lee obtains the highest price, and is most commonly consumed in China, the other being principally consigned to Europe, or rather to Bombay and the eastern Straits, where it is manufactured for European consumption. Small quantities are obtained in the vicinity of Canton, the whole being collected within a circuit of twenty-five miles round the city; it is the least valuable of any in the empire. The difference in the gathering is sufficient to constitute five classes, the last being so exceedingly coarse, that the duty is invariably evaded. The leaf which supplies the worm with food in the south is from a diminutive shrub, whereas, in the northern districts, the mulberry tree obtains a considerable height, and resembles that which is a native of Europe. Great quantities of silk are manufactured in China, both for the home and foreign market.

Emigration is very prevalent among the Chinese

mechanics, though strictly forbidden by the laws. Not being restrained by the love of country, so peculiar to most nations, they are often tempted to seek in other lands that encouragement which an excess of population denies them in their own. Singapore appears to be their favourite place of destination, four junks having arrived there not long ago with 1600 of them on board; whatever place they may select to pursue their avocations, they are invariably remarkable for industry and skill. By the aid of their services, the trade of Singapore is becoming every day of greater importance. The junks, which are the means of traffic between Canton and this station, are generally from 250 to 400 tons in burden. One of the largest size employs from 80 to 100 seamen; they leave China in January in the height of the monsoon.

It may be remarked that the Chinese make the worst seamen, and probably the best boatmen in the world. This observation, which I have had abundant opportunity of making, is fully confirmed by the experience of Mr. Gutzlaff, who in his voyages along the coast of China, thus speaks of the native sailors employed on board the junks.

"These sailors are not, usually, men who have been trained up to their occupation, but wretches who were obliged to flee from their homes; and they frequently engage for a voyage before they have ever been on board a junk. All of them, however stupid, are commanders; and if any thing of im-

portance is to be done, they will bawl out their commands to each other, till all is utter confusion. There is no subordination, no cleanliness, no mutual regard or interest. The navigation of junks is performed without the aid of charts, or any other helps, except the compass; it is mere coasting, and the whole art of the pilot consists in directing the course according to the promontories n sight. In time of danger, the men immediately lose all courage; and their indecision frequently proves the destruction of their vessel. Although they consider our mode of sailing as somewhat superior to their own, still they cannot but allow the palm of superiority to the ancient craft of the 'celestial empire.' When any alteration for improvement is proposed, they will readily answer,—if we adopt this measure, we shall justly fall under the suspicion of barbarism."

To the boatmen, on the contrary, he gives the utmost praise.

"I have never met with more daring boatmen than those from Fuhkeen. With the most perfect carelessness, they go, four in number, in a small boat, over the foaming billows; while their larger vessels are driven about, and in danger of being swallowed up by the sea."

Trades' unions are common in China, and pecuniary penalties are incurred by such of their members as break through the regulations which they enact. A dispute arose at one time, between

the fishmongers of Canton and the boatmen who supply them, regarding a change which the latter wished to introduce in the weights. The 'street-mongers' gained their point and fined their opponents the expense of a theatrical exhibition for the public amusement. The fines usually levied, are of this nature.

The use of opium has become so universal among the people of China, that the laws which render it penal, and the proclamations which send forth their daily fulminations against its continuance, have not the slightest effect in decreasing the prevalence of so general a habit. It is a propensity that has seized upon all ranks and classes, and is gradually on the increase, from the difficulty of abandoning the inclination when once it has been formed. It is forbidden by the laws, in consequence of the injurious effect which it has upon the moral character of the people, and in the edicts of the local magistrates it is decried avowedly for the same reason, though the Mandarins themselves notoriously indulge in the practice they so loudly condemn. In obedience to the laws, and as a nominal observance of their duties, they waste the idle artillery of words in official interdiction, while they lend in private the aid of their example, or urged by other motives than the indulgence of their appetites, permit their acquiescence in its use or introduction to be purchased by a bribe. To judge by the description in these documents of the means

used to convey it into China, one might suppose it was a measure of equal secrecy and danger, but the corruptness of the magistrates and the inefficiency of the force which they employ, leave but little difficulty in the way of its importation. It is urged by those, who advocate the traffic in this drug, on account of the immense wealth it opens to our India possessions, that the consequence of its use are by no means so detrimental as stated by the Chinese authorities, and a comparison is drawn between the use of it in China, and that of wine and spirits in European countries.

It must be admitted, that its effects as described in official documents, wherein it is invariably entitled, "opium dirt," are somewhat exaggerated; the more so, perhaps, by those who would thus conceal their own indulgence in the forbidden luxury; yet it cannot be denied, that it is of serious injury to the constitutions of those who use it, and produces, in a great degree, that enervation of mind and body which is so adherent to the Chinese population. Like dram-drinking, habit but increases the inclination, which is seldom abandoned but with the life of its victim; and the injury which it produces is not a whit the less searching, because its action is not so apparent. In a moral point of view, its evil influence must be confessed by every disinterested observer. The idle and luxurious habits which it creates, if not criminal within themselves, pave the way for all those

vices to which human weakness is subject. The Chinese are merely smokers of the opium, unlike the Turks, who habituate themselves to chewing it in the crude state. Smoking houses abound in Canton, and in every town and village in the empire: the inhabitants of every class, who can furnish themselves with the means to obtain the pipe, are seldom without this article of general luxury. Its high price, in consequence of prohibition, has hitherto confined it to the affluent; but the facilities of traffic, and the extent of the trade, render it daily still less expensive.[1] Among the means used to decrease its consumption, one lately adopted at Canton is not the least singular. A tale was written and placarded about the principal streets, giving a very minute account of its pretended manufacture, in which dead mens' bones were described as the chief ingredient.

The natives of the district Tae-chow-foo employ themselves in the plantation of poppy and the production of opium, and so profitable are the results which their labours have realized, that the practice is rapidly increasing; so that the real interests of agriculture are materially neglected. The opium is produced in the following manner:—the seed of the poppy is sown in the tenth moon; and in the fourth moon of the following year, when the capsules, or heads, are formed, they are cut open, and a white matter extracted. The juice thus obtained, is boiled until it forms a clayey substance. There

are others who produce it, by a similar process, from the various species of the holly-hock.

The opium trade was at first transacted solely at Macao, until the local authorities carried their extortions to so great a height, that the enterprizing foreigners sought to shake off their dependance on such wretches, by boldly conveying it into the very port of Canton, where it continued till 1821; when, in consequence of the complaints of the Hong merchants, it was transferred from Whampoa to Lintin, at which place the opium vessels have continued to maintain their station unmolested.

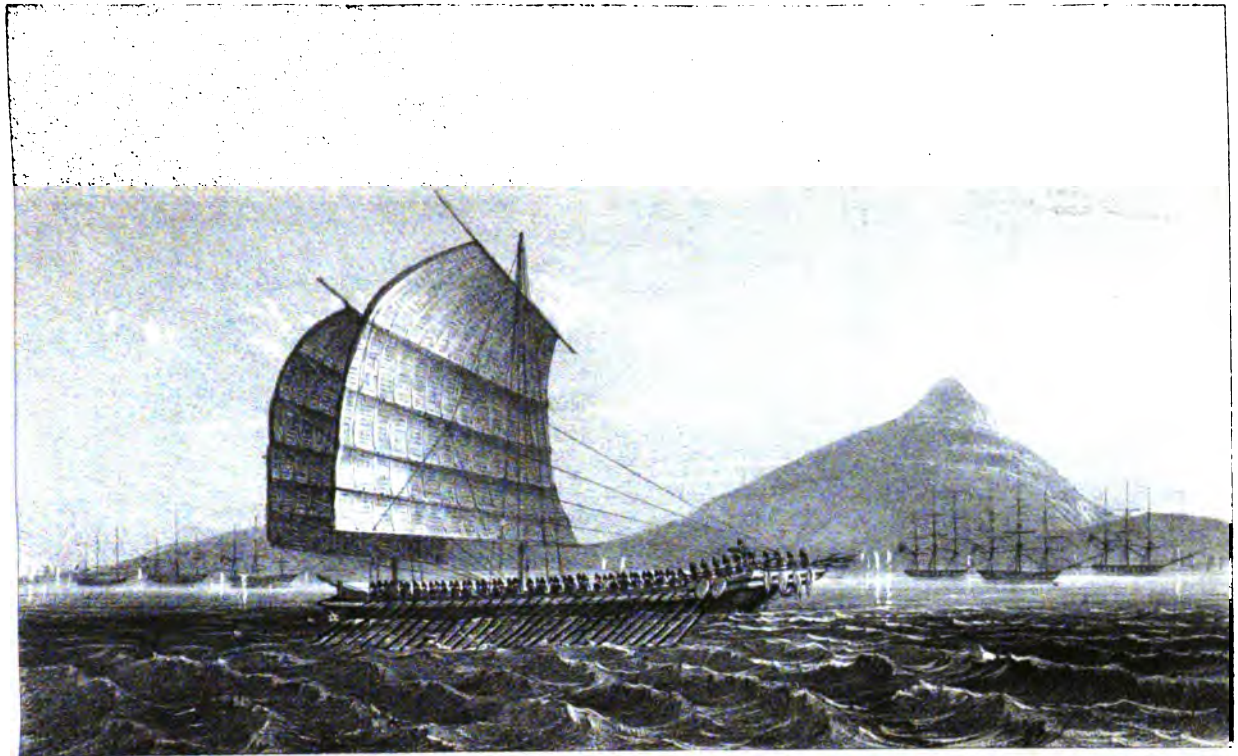
"The whole business of the transport of opium between Lintin and Canton, is so admirably managed, on a fixed scale, that the boats are but seldom interfered with, nor are they likely to be, so long as the *Free Traders* can afford to pay the Mandarins so much better for not fighting, than the Government will for doing their duty. A skirmish is got up, every now and then, and a few stones interchanged, in a friendly way, as a proof of their vigilance; but no regular attack has been for a long time made; nor, from the better equipment of the smuggler, in point of numbers and efficient strength, would a contest be lightly hazarded. The opium-boats pass and repass before the Factories, in open day, in defiance of the express orders that no boats of the class to which they belong shall be suffered to exist; and the precious drug is landed in the suburbs of the city in full

security. Some of it is at times conveyed by the very boats sent down to act against the smugglers, and to them the smuggling of saltpetre is almost wholly confined. The exact rates paid to the river Mandarins are not known: the allowance to the Lintin one, is one dollar per chest; and, at the request of the smugglers, this is paid by them on taking away the drug; so that the foreigners actually become receivers of the bribe for the Government officers."

Payment is invariably made before the delivery of the drug, generally to the foreign merchant at Canton, when an order is given on the Captain of the vessel where the opium is deposited, and which is conveyed thither by smugglers, who attend with their boats to receive it. These boats commonly pull from thirty to forty oars, but frequently a far greater number, and are probably the finest row-boats in the world.

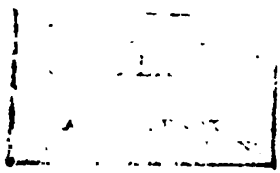
At certain periods vessels leave Canton laded with presents for the Emperor, of various products, both foreign and domestic. The use of the Imperial flag* on these occasions, preserves them from the liability of being searched, and an opportunity is thus given for the secret conveyance of the drug; several hundred chests are frequently trans-

* All boats having a Mandarin on board, whether he happens to be dead or alive, so long as his flag is flying, are also exempt from the right of search.



On Stone by L. Haghe

Day & Haghe Lith.rs to the King



mitted in this way, the compliance of the Mandarin in charge having been first obtained by a considerable fee. After the opium is landed, the most usual method of carriage is in the sleeves, and loose dress of the smugglers. The number of chests imported into China in 1830 was 14,000,* each chest weighing 133⅓lbs.; and the average quantity of *smokeable extract*, which is obtained is calculated at sixty per cent. In one province it is the custom for the women to indulge in the use of the pipe, but in all other parts of the empire the habit is not tolerated in any but the licentious. The interdictions of the legislature are not levelled against its introduction, solely from a

† The following Table will show the respective yearly supplies of the drug, from the commencement of the trade in 1816; and the gradual increase since the first importation:—

Seasons.	PATNA AND BENARES.				MALWA.				TOTAL.	
	Chests	Price.		Value.	Chests	Price.		Value.	Chests	Value.
		Low.	High.			Low.	High.			
	No.	Doll.	Doll.	Dollars.	No.	Doll.	Doll.	Dollars.	No.	Dollars.
1816-17	2610	1080	1320	3,132,000	600	800	950	525,000	3210	3,657,000
17-18	2530	1200	1530	3,200,450	1150	600	800	703,800	3680	3,904,250
18-19	3050	800	1200	3,050,000	1530	600	850	1,109,250	4580	4,159,250
19-20	2970	1150	1320	3,667,950	1630	950	1400	1,915,250	4600	5,583,200
20-21	3050	1300	2500	5,795,000	1720	1230	1800	2,605,800	4770	8,400,800
21-22	2910	1650	2500	6,038,250	1718	1050	1600	2,276,350	4628	8,314,600
22-23	1822	1180	2500	2,828,930	4000	1080	1500	5,160,000	5822	7,988,930
23-24	2910	1100	1900	4,656,000	4172	800	1050	3,859,100	7082	8,515,100
24-25	2655	900	1450	3,119,625	6000	550	950	4,500,000	8655	7,619,625
25-26	3442	800	1150	3,141,755	6179	560	850	4,446,450	9621	7,608,205
26-27	3661	800	1250	3,668,565	6308	864	1060	5,941,520	9969	9,610,085
27-28	5134	815	1220	5,125,155	4401	950	1420	5,299,920	9535	10,425,075
28-29	5965	880	1100	5,604,235	7771	950	1250	6,928,880	13,132	12,533,115
29-30	7143	805	1000	6,149,577	6857	740	1030	5,907,580	14,000	12,057,157

regard for the morality of the people, but also on account of the valuable productions of the country for which it is taken in exchange. The decrease in the Sycee silver, thus occasioned, is a great source of annoyance to the ruling powers. The severity of the penalty incurred by those who either sell or use the "poisonous dirt" is a certain security against its infliction, among a people with whom the propensity is so general. The following is an extract from the law against it, as contained in the 11th vol. of the Penal Code:—

"Dealers in Opium shall be exposed with the wooden collar about their necks one month, and then sent to the army on the frontier. Accomplices shall be punished with a hundred blows, and transported three years. Those who open shops to sell Opium, and entice the sons of respectable families to smoke, shall be condemned to death by strangling after a period of confinement. Accomplices shall be punished with a hundred blows, and be transported three years. Masters of boats, constables and neighbours, shall be punished with a hundred blows, and three years' transportation. Officers of Government at Court, who buy and smoke Opium, shall be dismissed from the service, receive a hundred blows, and be exposed with the collar about their necks two months. Soldiers and people who buy and smoke Opium, shall be punished with a hundred blows, and exposed with the collar one month"

The trade in tea is, in all respects, the most important; and the late changes in the charter of the East India Company have drawn more attention to the subject than it received before. Now that the trade is thrown open, people are anxious to know whether they are to get better or cheaper tea; and an article that penetrates the domestic circle so universally, may be supposed to form a topic of very general interest. I endeavoured to obtain as much practical information respecting the process of preparing tea for the market as I could, feeling that some authentic statements of that kind would be expected from so matter-of-fact a traveller. The account which I have put together of the mode of drying, packing, and tasting may be fully relied upon, as it was procured and drawn up on the spot. It may be well, however, to place before my readers a passage from an admirable letter addressed by Mr. Majoribanks to Mr. Grant on the subject of our commercial relations with China, inferring an useful introduction to the details alluded to. Mr. Majoribanks' great experience on the subject gives additional value to these observations.

"The principal tea provinces—for tea is more or less grown in every part of the empire—are Fo-kien, Keang-nan, and Che-kiang, all maritime provinces, and Keang-si. The tea is not even permitted to be brought coastwise to Canton in native vessels, but is conveyed through the interior, partly by tedious and difficult river and canal navigation, partly by

laborious land carriage, and is, in one instance, transported by manual labour over a very high range of mountains. Frequent transhipments are rendered necessary, and it is subject to these inconveniences for the sole purpose of securing numerous and exorbitant transit duties. There is, perhaps, no produce of the earth which is exposed to such a variety of taxation as a tea-leaf. It yields a profit in the first instance to the small farmer by whom it is cultivated; and in the second to the tea merchant by whom it is manufactured. It is taxed, directly and indirectly, five or six times in its progress to Canton, where, on its arrival, besides yielding large profits to the Hong merchants, and paying the Imperial duties, it is subject to the impositions of the officers of the local government; it pays an expensive freight to England, and after yielding liberal profits to the Company, it falls into the merciless hands of the Chancellor of the Exchequer, by whom it is charged an *ad valorem* duty of a hundred per cent. It is needless to point out what prodigious advantages would arise from our ships proceeding, as formerly, to the ports in the tea provinces, or what an extended consumption there would be of our manufactures by an intercourse with the more northern portion of the Chinese empire. I am disposed to regard it as presenting the widest field for commercial enterprise, which remains untrodden in the world."

I will, for the sake of convenience, first explain the process of drying and packing; and then those of tasting and weighing—all of which I witnessed.

Tea Drying.—The low-priced teas are sent to Canton, in a state only fit to reach that place without sustaining any injury, being but partially dried and packed in large tubs, from whence they are removed for the process of drying, into barrel-shaped baskets, about three feet long and eighteen inches in diameter, which are loosely lined with coarse china paper. These baskets are then placed in the drying-house, and laid on their bulge in a long single row, on a wooden frame-work, about a foot from the ground, over which there were four more rows, in the drying-house we visited, so that there were five rows piled up on each side of a strong charcoal fire, which was made on a brick flooring, the whole length of the building, with the baskets as near as they could be placed with safety, the fire and the tea occupying nearly the whole width of it, which was also very low, for the purpose of condensing the heat. We entered while the process of drying was in full activity, but we could not remain long, the heat being so great that we were soon compelled to retreat. The finer qualities of teas are all prepared for exportation before they are brought to Canton, and are dried in a different manner, which was explained to us, there happening to be one of the small apparatus's

there, by which it is prepared, and which is simply thus:—There was an iron basin, about two feet in diameter at the top, and nine inches in depth. This basin was fitted over a small stove, heated with charcoal. When required for use, and after the tea was put into the basin, it was continually stirred with the hand until the leaves were curled up, and thought sufficiently dry.

Tea Packing.—I accompanied some friends to Gowqua's tea-warehouse, to have the manner of packing this article described to me, which I found to be as follows:—In the first instance, there was a place fitted up in the middle of the warehouse for receiving the tea, preparatory to its being packed for exportation, viz. fifty feet long, twelve broad, and eight high. It had a boarded floor, and sliding pannels for the sides, which were removed as the tea was reduced in bulk. The lead* used for lining to the chests of the bohea and congo teas, is thicker than that which is used for the chests of finer teas, and the chests are both larger and stronger, with iron clamps at the corners for the common teas. It is packed by Chinese labourers, who stand in the chest and tread it down with their naked feet. The large chests contain on an average, about 165 pounds of tea. On going into the counting-house, at the warehouse, we were each presented with a cup of tea, without milk or sugar,

* The sheet lead used for the tea-chests, is composed of seventy-five parts lead, and five parts tin.

and made by boiling water being poured on a small quantity of tea, previously put into the cup; after which it was covered over, during the time it was drawing. The saucer was not circular, but similar in form to an ordinary snuffer-stand, with a concavity in the centre of it, for the bottom of the cup to fit in. The Chinese are said never to drink the green, but always the black teas.

Tea Tasting.—The following is the mode adopted by Mr. Reeves, jun. (tea taster to the British Factory) for judging of the quality of teas, required to be purchased for the H. E. I. Company. I accompanied Mr. Reeves to one of the apartments in the Factory, round which he had two rows of tea chests, one row being full, and the other empty; so that as much of the full one might be turned into the empty one as Mr. Reeves thought proper, to examine, and select any part of each chest. He first examines its appearance and smell, after which he takes an ounce from every chest, tasting six at a time, in as many small tea-pots, by pouring boiling water into each, and allowing it to remain five minutes; he then empties them all into the same number of cups, and judges of the qualities by their colour, smell, and taste. I presume it is almost unnecessary to state, that sugar and milk must not be used, nor is the tea swallowed. Of course it is necessary to be very particular in the quality of the water, therefore, Mr. Reeves, sen.,* always caused

* Mr. Reeves, jun. has only lately succeeded his father.

the water to be procured from the river at that season of the year when it is very high; and strange to say, the superstition of the Chinese induces them to perform this duty only on certain days, when the number and the day of the month correspond: for example, the 5th day of the 5th moon is generally the earliest period of the river being swoln by the rains; but, if the water is not high enough then, they will wait for the 6th day of the 6th moon; and if that will not do, for the 7th of the 7th moon, by which day they are almost certain of succeeding. After the water is taken from the river, it is put into large jars, where it generally remains for several months before it is required to be used, and all the extraneous matter has had time to deposit itself, consequently it is more pure than any water that can be procured at the time it is required.

Tea Weighing.—The manner of weighing the tea is as follows:—The chests are laid out in rows of hundreds, when one of the gentlemen of the Factory selects five or six chests from each row, from which an average of the whole is taken. The Hon. Company's tea-taster selects his samples, in a similar manner, for judging of the average quality of the whole.

In an article, which appeared some time back in the Quarterly Review, the recent alterations in the management of our trade with China, were described as likely to be productive of the worst consequences, so far as the quality of the teas was

concerned. I subjoin a passage from the article, which appears to have an air of authority, but I do not mean to verify or dispute its accuracy:—

"The evil consequences which we had predicted (says the writer) have already begun to show themselves. The most respectable of the Hong merchants have retired from the business, and the rest are either unable or unwilling to advance a shilling to enable the poor cultivators of tea to prepare the usual supply, though 40,000 tons of shipping were expected at Canton; but we shall, notwithstanding, have *some* tea, and it is as well that our readers should know what *sort* of tea it will be. Our information is from an eye-witness of unquestionable authority, recently arrived in England from China. On the opposite side of the river to, and at a short distance from Canton, is a manufactory for converting the very worst kind of coarse black tea into green—well-known in Canton by the name of *wo-ping*, and which was always rejected by the agents of the East India Company. The plan is to stir it about on iron plates moderately heated, mixing it up with a composition of turmeric, indigo, and white lead, by which process it acquires that blooming blue of plums, and that crispy appearance which are supposed to indicate the fine green teas. Our informant says, that there can be no mistake respecting the white lead, as the Chinese superintendent called it by its common name, *yuen-fun*. At the same time, it is right to

state, that pulverised gypsum (known by the name of *shet-kao*), is understood by the gentlemen of the late Factory, to be employed to subdue a too intense blue colour given by the indigo. There were already prepared, when this visit took place, 50,000 chests of this precious article, just enough for three cargoes of the very largest ships of the East India Company. The crafty proprietor told our friend and the other visitors, that this tea was not for the English, but the American market; but we shall, no doubt, have our full share of it. Nay, some particulars lately published in the newspapers render it highly probable that the importation of the well-doctored *wo-ping* has already commenced."

There may be much truth in this statement; but it must be remembered, at the same time, that long before the repeal of the monopoly, we had as spurious tea in this country, as ever we are likely to have again. Competition usually works good for the public:—Why should it not in this instance?

Foreigners, on arriving at Canton, are not permitted to take their families on shore, the landing of ladies being specially forbidden. They are ordered to be taken to Macao and left there till the return of the vessel from Whampoa. In 1830, a proclamation was issued in consequence of the conveyance of a lady from an English ship to the Factory at Canton; the most strenuous exertions were commanded to be used "to drive her back" to Macao, but the timely preparations which were

made to oppose such a proceeding, caused all the threats of the magistrate to evaporate in smoke. About the same time a notice was received from the Portuguese Governor of Macao, forbidding, by command of the court of Lisbon, the future residence of all foreign merchants at that port, without a previous permission obtained from Lisbon. The people of China have caught the infection of antipathy to foreign intercourse from their rulers. Those Europeans who are adventurous enough to break the bounds which are allotted them at Canton, sometimes pay very dearly for their excursion. A walk round the city walls, a distance of nine miles, has at various times been accomplished; but not, in general, without subjecting the persons who effected it to the most hostile attacks from the cowardly population. Not long since, an English Baronet was plundered of almost every article of dress, and returned to the Factory in a consequent state of nakedness.

Slavery exists to a great extent in China. In the district of Nam-hoy, in Canton province, there are about ten thousand slaves. They are distinguished as the *voluntary* slaves, those who sell themselves, or are sold by their parents; and the *involuntary*, who have either been born in bondage, or are consigned to it by the Government as a punishment. They are hereditary property, and are only permitted to wear stated dresses. The penalty incurred by beating them to death, which is by no means

uncommon, is the infliction of sixty blows, and transportation for a year and a half. The pay of official persons is forfeited, in case their parents have been guilty of such an outrage on humanity.

It is inferred from the mass of wretchedness which exists among the people of Canton, that poor laws in China, if there be such, are exceedingly limited in their operation. It appears that the Parish Police, to whom money is intrusted for the use of the poor, are in the habit of appropriating it to their own purposes, so that not even misery is sacred from the effects of that general want of principle which prevails.

China abounds with beggars, some being so from necessity, but the greater part from inclination. It is pursued by numbers, as a profession that is equally idle and profitable. A string of ten or a dozen blind supplicants is often to be met in the streets; and it is said that children are frequently deprived of their sight to enable them to follow the business to greater advantage. Others appear in a more formidable character, and by frequent extortion at marriages and funerals, render themselves subject to severe penalties. This vagrancy of the blind, however, appears to be permitted by the Government; for although there is a national institution for rendering assistance to them, the pecuniary aid is so inadequate to their necessities, that the magistrates allow them to beg and sing in the streets for the additional means of subsistence.

The blind are admitted to the institution by tickets; but, with the usual roguery that distinguishes the Chinese throughout all the relations of life, the magistrates have frequently had occasion to issue proclamations setting forth their suspicions that the tickets have been transferred to persons only "half blind," with a view to impose upon the Government. In 1832, the number of blind persons that assembled at the institution to be examined was 2394, and the allowance granted to them was four or five mace per month: under a shilling a week.

Besides the institution for the blind, there is one entitled Yuh-ying-tang, or foundling hospital, supported by Government. It was founded in 1698, and rebuilt and enlarged in 1732. It stands without the walls of the city, on the east, near the asylum for the blind; it has accommodations for two or three hundred children, and is maintained at an annual expense of 2522 taels. The sums necessary for defraying the expense of these two establishments are derived from an impost of 900 dollars on every foreign vessel that brings rice to Canton—they being exempt from all port dues.

There is also in the city of Canton, a small fund for the relief of widows. It is of recent origin, having commenced operations only on the first year of the present Emperor's reign. Government unites with the gentry in supporting and managing it. It is already getting into disorder, and the Leang-taou has issued a threatening proclamation to the widows.

They get about five taels* per annum; one tael for each quarter, and one to pass the new year. The number now on the fund is 1500. The complaint is, that those who get married sell their tickets instead of returning them; and the friends of those who die do the same. This is a sort of parish relief, and those who have kindred on the spot do not like the exposure and brow-beating, necessary to get the alms; so that the chief applicants are widows whose kindred live at a distance from Canton.

There are not any asylums in China for the reception of the insane; if sufficiently quiet, they are intrusted to the care of their relations; but if their friends are unable to manage them, the only alternative is a prison, where, it may be presumed, the treatment they meet with is not of the most lenient nature. Should their relatives fail to report their insanity to the Government, and the death of any person is occasioned by their being at large, they render themselves liable to the infliction of a certain number of blows.

There is a *Lazaretto* on the eastern side of Canton, entitled Ma-fung-yuen, or the lepers' garden. It was originated and is maintained by Government, who have adapted it for the accommodation of a thousand persons. Members of the wealthy classes, who have contracted the distemper through indulgence in vicious habits, are obliged, according to law, to

* A tael is equal to 6s. 8d. sterling.

reside in this establishment, though they frequently bribe the police for permission to evade it. Those of an inferior grade, follow their respective vocations during their confinement, and marriages take place among them. The disease is not supposed to continue beyond the third generation.

Although the system of exclusiveness, which prevails amongst the Chinese, amounts to a prohibition against the entrance of foreigners into the Celestial Empire, there is yet reason to believe that the authorities at one period licensed the visits of strangers, and even protected them by a species of passport, similar to that which is now used under the police regulations of Europe. In an ancient account, which I find in an early volume of the Chinese Repository, given by two Mohammedan travellers who passed through the country, the existence of this sanction appears to be confirmed.

"If a man would travel from one place to another, he must take two passes with him, the one from the Governor, the other from the eunuch or lieutenant. The Governor's pass permits him to set out on his journey, and takes notice of the name of the traveller, and those also of his company; the age and family of the one and the other; for every body in China, whether a native or an Arab, or any other foreigner, is obliged to declare all he knows of himself, nor can he possibly be excused the so doing. The eunuch's or lieutenant's pass specifies the quantity of money, or goods, which the traveller and those

with him, take along with them, and this is done for the information of the frontier places, where these two passes are examined; for whenever a traveller arrives at any of them, it is registered, that such a one, the son of such a one, of such a family, passed through this place on such a day, in such a month, in such a year, and in such company. And by these means they prevent any one from carrying off the money or effects of other persons, or their being lost; so that if any thing has been carried off unjustly, or the traveller dies on the road, they immediately know what has become of the things, and they are restored to the claimant or to the heirs."

CHAP. VII.

Religion—Language.

While the Chinese must be considered in the strictest sense of the words a sensual people, it is said, notwithstanding, that they are much devoted to reading; that they are not tainted with prejudices of any kind (an assertion which, for my own part, I am disposed to doubt altogether); and that they are generally very sensible, and willing to be convinced. Perhaps the origin of some of these opinions may be traced to the absence of all state religion in China. In our understanding of the expression, there is no state religion in China, since there is no *endowed* establishment. The Government does not pay any priesthood; nor do the supreme authorities recognize any contributions of that description, except some gratuities to the imperial chaplains in ordinary. The religion of the Chinese, like that of the Americans, depends entirely upon the voluntary system. The State neither acknowledges such claims, nor enforces them. The want of religious institutions, fostered by the Government, has the inevitable effect of making the people indifferent to religion altogether, which creates one of the great difficulties that have hitherto impeded all attempts at the introduction of Christianity. Although, on the

other hand, it presents a facility to the labours of the Missionaries, in so far that the Chinese, not being prejudiced in favour of any particular religion, are open to the temptation of adopting that which might be made to appear the most desirable in a worldly point of view. They will go whichever way their interest points, and if Christianity could be made attractive in that sense, or as holding out to them any inducements of a pleasurable nature, there would not be much difficulty in persuading them to become Christians.

The fact that there is no state religion in China, a fact which is not very generally known, leads to more important conclusions than it may appear to carry at first sight. In Europe, religion, or an established church, is held to be an essential element in Government. Buonaparte called the priests, the Moral Police. In our courts of justice, and throughout the whole machinery of our legal and social relations, oaths are considered as the necessary tests, obligations, and qualifications, by which individuals are held responsible to each other and to the state. In China there are no oaths. Law is administered without having recourse to any ordeal of that nature. The state tolerates, but does not support a priesthood. It tolerates three sects—Taouism, Budhism, and Mohammedanism—but they have no endowments. Confucianism cannot be regarded as a religion, but as a system of morals. Although there is no established code of

belief, there is an universal regard paid to idols, and, on that account, Christianity is especially interdicted, because it forbids idol-worship, and represses the indulgence of the vicious passions. But, although there is no priesthood, the Government sets its example of idolatry, which is copied by the people. The magistrates may be regarded as the only priests. There are numerous instances, constantly occurring, of the magistrates going on public occasions to worship some neighbouring idol, and when the ceremony is over, they sit down to a good dinner, which casts a sort of mockery over their previous proceeding, that deprives it of much of its solemnity and impressiveness in the eyes of the people; so that, while some forms of religious observances are attended to, no care is taken to generate in the minds and affections of the community a proper sense of religious duty.

The officers of the Government, in their individual capacity, affect the most extravagant piety. At Macao, for example, the Port Admiral instituted a subscription, commencing himself with a donation of 100 dollars, for the purpose of rendering public honours to the "Queen of Heaven," and all the inferior officers and commercial people, down to the lowest grade, flocked in with their subscriptions. The Queen of Heaven possesses a temple on a little rocky promontory, at Barfort, and there her ladyship stands about a foot high on the summit, the approach to which is up some winding steps, the face

of the rock being diversified with fantastic figures of distinct gods, divine stones, &c. On a high rock, above all, there are certain characters engraven on the stone—*Tae-yin*—which signifies "The great one," meaning, it is understood, the first cause; but whether the first cause be intellectual or physical, has not yet been determined by the ethical philosophers of China. On the occasion to which I particularly allude, a new image was dedicated to her ladyship, and also to the minor divinities, the old ones having been partly consumed by fire. When the ceremony was completed, the committee of building and repairs issued a printed paper, inviting the gods and goddesses to return to their statues, when the eye of the image should become vivified by the touch of blood—according to the ancient Mosaic notion that the life is in the blood. For eight or ten days subsequently, crowds of people of all ages and conditions thronged to the temple, bringing with them every variety of offering; and playing, in street procession, gongs, drums, cymbals, lutes, &c. Pastry, fowls, young animals, fruits, wines, &c., were offered up; young girls were carried on tables, personating the nymphs of the forests, and boys galloped forward on horseback. The Court of Comus never presented so grotesque an assemblage as this Court of the Queen of Heaven. Her ladyship was a young woman of the province of Fokien, who had been deified before the accession of the reigning family; and of late years

the Emperor, whose province it is to sanction new divinities, has deified another girl, who was said, during the Sung dynasty, to have expended her fortune in endeavouring to raise an embankment to keep out the sea; but, failing, threw herself into the current, and was drowned.

Although there is no state religion in China, and the priesthood cannot, therefore, be said to exercise any direct control by virtue of their office, the Confucionist sceptics possess extraordinary influence over the people. They are generally the best instructed, and, for that reason, are advanced to the important offices of Mandarins. They deny the independent existence of spirits, and maintain that death is annihilation. Every thing ceases with death, and universal darkness succeeds. The necessary corollary from these doctrines is—that responsibility does not extend beyond this life—and the practical consequence of entrusting power to the hands of such persons is a system of complete despotism, not only over the personal rights of the community at large, but over the mental liberty of the people. They deny the right of private judgment, and maintain, in plain terms, that the uneducated—that is, the mass of the people, have no right to think, but should bow implicitly to those who think for them.

It will be seen from these observations that materialism is the religion of China. The material universe, typified through all conceivable agencies,

is the object of worship. When the high-priest worships heaven, he wears a robe of azure, to represent the sky: when he worships the earth, his robe is yellow, to express the soil: for the sun he wears a flaming robe of red; and propitiates the moon in pale white. On these occasions, the Emperor and nobles, and centenary of official hierophants, appear in splendid court dresses. The same typical spirit pervades the whole. The altar intended for the worship of heaven is round, that being the shape they attach to the firmament—the altar of the earth square, from I presume, the same excellent reason: and so on. All these facts, which might be multiplied into details which would only weary the patience of the reader, bear evidence to the one important point that materialism is the great feature of the Chinese faith.

It is difficult to conceive that there should be consistent with this system of worship, a clearly defined doctrine of rewards and punishments, in which the various kinds of criminality are defined and proscribed, and the practical virtues pointed out and enforced. Yet, there is such a code, and it is universally received throughout China. It must be observed, however, that the rewards and punishments do not extend beyond this life. There is nothing promised for hereafter but final extinction; and the grand punishment is that the offended divinities will shorten the term of the lives of the sinners. If a man violates any of the ordinances,

he must expect that his days will be numbered, and should the divine vengeance not be satisfied with the portion of time it is thus enabled to cut off, the remainder is to be exacted from the relatives and heirs of the deceased. In this creed of good and evil, the enumeration of crime is remarkably minute, and sometimes descends into the most petty and ridiculous details; but on the whole, it describes and divides the relative duties of men with considerable force, brevity, and correctness. This curious document is attributed to the founder of the Taou sect, who was contemporaneous with Confucius.

It does not appear, however, that the system of rewards for good conduct, and punishment for bad, is very strictly followed by the government, in its dealings with the people. The Emperor seldom extends any lenity to the guilty, and considers that he acts with great forbearance if he commutes the barbarous punishment of being cut to pieces, to the less excruciating death of decapitation. In fact, while the moral code inculcates a system of rewards and punishments, (which, however inferior and inconsistent it must appear in reference to the Christian dispensation, is still proportioned to its objects, and agreeable to the general sense of right and wrong,) the government of the country violates at will, all obligations, human and divine.

The chief functionary of religion in China is the Emperor himself: he is the High Priest, the

"*pontifex maximus.*" Of inferior rank to him are the kings, nobles, and the civil and military officers. A sect of philosophers, called the *Joo-Keaou*, have monopolized to themselves the union of the civil, and sacred functions. On the occasions of grand state worship, neither priests nor women are admitted. The mystery is a thing for the chosen classes. Nor are the empress and the imperial concubines, princesses, &c. permitted to take any part in the ceremonies, except when the sacrifice to the patroness of the silk manufacture takes place by itself. The ceremonies consist in bowing, kneeling, and knocking the head against the ground, or, as they are called in Chinese, *pae, kwei, kow.* The Emperor alone is exempt from the necessity of knocking his head against the ground. The Imperial Majesty of China, who demands from all the monarchs of the earth similar marks of submission, refuses to offer them to the divinities. He substitutes for the nine knockings of the head the easier prostrations of nine bows.

If we may judge, however, by the phraseology of the following document, his Majesty retains the expression, although he does not fulfil the form of the ceremony. This document is a prayer for rain which was written by his Imperial Majesty Taoukwang, and offered up on the 28th day of the 6th moon, of the 12th year of his reign. (July 25th, 1832.)

"Kneeling, a memorial is hereby presented, to

cause affairs to be heard. 'Oh, Alas!' Imperial Heaven, were not the world afflicted by extraordinary changes, I would not dare to present extraordinary services. But this year the drought is most unusual. Summer is past, and no rain has fallen. Not only do agriculture and human beings feel the dire calamity, but also beasts and insects, herbs and trees almost cease to live.

"I, the minister of Heaven, am placed over mankind, and am responsible for keeping the world in order, and tranquillizing the people. Although it is now impossible for me to sleep or eat with composure; although I am scorched with grief, and tremble with anxiety; still, after all, no genial and copious showers have been obtained.

"Some days ago, I fasted, and offered rich sacrifices, on the altars of the gods of the land and the grain; and had to be thankful for gathering clouds, and slight showers, but not enough to cause gladness.

"Looking up, I consider that Heaven's heart is benevolence and love. The sole cause is the daily deeper atrocity of my sins; but little sincerity, and little devotion.—Hence I have been unable to move Heaven's heart, and bring down abundant blessings.

"Having respectfully searched the records, I find that in the 24th year of Keen-lung, my Imperial grandfather, the high, honourable, and pure Emperor reverently performed a 'great snow ser-

vice.' I feel impelled, by ten thousand considerations, to look up and imitate the usage, and with trembling anxiety, rashly assail Heaven, examine myself, and consider my errors; looking up, and hoping that I may obtain pardon, I ask myself,—whether in sacrificial services I have been disrespectful? Whether, or not, pride and prodigality have had a place in my heart, springing up there unobserved? Whether, from the length of time, I have become remiss in attending to the affairs of government; and have been unable to attend to them with that serious diligence, and strenuous effort, which I ought? Whether I have uttered irreverent words, and have deserved reprehension? Whether perfect equity has been attained in conferring rewards, or inflicting punishments? Whether in raising mausoleums and laying out gardens, I have distressed the people and wasted property? Whether in the appointment of officers, I have failed to obtain fit persons, and thereby the acts of government have been petty and vexatious to the people? Whether punishments have been unjustly inflicted or not? Whether the oppressed have found no means of appeal? Whether in persecuting heterodox sects, the innocent have not been involved? Whether or not the magistrates have insulted the people, and refused to listen to their affairs? Whether in the successive military operations on the western frontiers there may have been the horrors of human slaughter, for the sake of

imperial rewards? Whether the largesses bestowed on the afflicted southern provinces were properly applied; or the people were left to die in the ditches? Whether the efforts to exterminate or pacify the rebellious mountaineers of Honan and Canton, were properly conducted; or whether they led to the inhabitants being trampled on as mire and ashes?—To all these topics to which my anxieties have been directed, I ought to lay the plumb-line, and strenuously endeavour to correct what is wrong; still recollecting that there may be faults which have not occurred to me in my meditations.

"Prostrate I beg Imperial Heaven, *Hwang Teen*, to pardon my ignorance and stupidity; and to grant me self-renovation, for myriads of innocent people are involved by me, a single man. My sins are so numerous, it is difficult to escape from them. Summer is past and autumn arrived; to wait longer will really be impossible. Knocking head I pray Imperial Heaven to hasten and confer gracious deliverance—a speedy and divinely beneficial rain; to save the people's lives; and in some degree redeem my iniquities. Oh, Alas! Imperial Heaven, observe these things! Oh, Alas! Imperial Heaven, be gracious to them. I am inexpressively grieved, alarmed, and frightened.—Reverently this memorial is presented."

At eight o'clock on the same evening that this prayer was offered up, the rain began to fall in sweet

and copious showers; which continued for several days.

For this manifestation of heavenly compassion, the Emperor in an order published, expresses his deep devotion, and intense gratitude, and the 2nd of August was appointed as a day of thanksgiving. Six kings were directed to repair to the sacred altars, respectively dedicated to heaven; to earth; to the gods of the land and grain; to the gods of heaven; to the gods of earth, and the gods of the revolving year.

Connected with these ceremonies are certain punishments for the neglect of due preparations, or perfect victims, &c. The punishment is either forfeitures of salary for a month, or a specified number of blows with a bamboo, which, however, can be transferred to any body else's shoulders upon the payment of a very small douceur. Indeed, all criminal responsibility in China may be transferred by the force of bribery: and a rich man who is condemned to death for murder, may find a substitute for a consideration.

The Chinese—whose mode of worship cannot be be considered to involve any particular form of faith or doctrine—possess no generic term to signify religion. They not only want religion, but a word to express it. The word *keaou*, which means to teach, or the things taught, doctrine or instruction, applies with equal force and propriety to all the sects, and to the ethics of Confucius: as well

also as to Christianity and Mohammedanism. But they do not use this word when they mean to direct attention to that form of worship which is practised by the authorities, and which cannot be called a state religion; nor, indeed, any religion at all, since it consists solely in rites and ceremonies. Yet, although it is certainly a bodily service, a mere organization of external forms, it implies obscurely assent or submission to some opinions; but what those opinions may be, or whether they be correct or incorrect, does not enter into the system. It is to be presumed that when men bow before an altar, and bring offerings to the Idols, they must mentally refer to some notion of the Divinity; but that is all that can be gleaned from the usages of the Chinese. The religion, as it is followed at court and by the authorities, is explained in a code of laws under two distinct heads: the one containing certain rules of decorum, by which are signified the rites and ceremonies: and the other the sacrifices and offerings. We gather from these records that the material world, in whole and and in parts, is the object of adoration; and that, subordinate in importance, are the celestial and terrestrial gods and infernal spirits. They worship also the work of their own hands, not only as it represents the divinities, but when its productions are used for earthly purposes—such as flags, banners, and cannon.

The language of the Chinese is as intangible as their religion. They have a language unquestionably, but it is extremely difficult to convey a satisfactory idea of its elements. In all other languages the student has a foundation upon which he commences; in the Chinese he has none,—he grasps the air. If an Englishman sets about the task of learning the Italian, German, or any other language, he finds an alphabet which, throughout its various combinations into words, he is enabled gradually to use, by referring it, as he proceeds, to the original standard furnished to him by his own language; but in the Chinese there is no alphabet. The characters, an erudite philologist observes, present nothing to the eye by which their pronunciation can be ascertained. Every word has a distinct and settled character of its own; nor is it affected by the number, case or gender of the nouns; or the mood, tense, or person of the verb. Throughout these inflections, as we would call them in other languages, the terminations remain unchanged. In fact there are no inflections whatever in the Chinese language. The work of declension and congujation is affected in the Chinese by separate monosyllables. Thus, while the communication of the written language in the ordinary way is rendered extremely difficult, the acquisition of the spoken language is greatly facilitated by the remarkable simplicity of its construction. The written and spoken languages

are perfectly distinct from each other. I will endeavour to explain their differences as clearly as I can, availing myself of such authorities as appear to be authentic and conclusive.

Originally, the *written* language seems to have been formed by rude representations of objects of sense. In the course of time, as necessity or, perhaps, the dawn of a species of civilization, urged the Chinese forward in the arts of life, these symbols were classified. They were resolved into eight classes,—numbers, celestial objects, terrestrial things, man, animals, plants, human productions, and all doubtful things that did not properly come under any of the previous heads. The number of radicals embraced under these divisions are differently stated; but, perhaps, the best authority extant is that which fixes them at 373. Out of these, 214 symbols were selected as keys, and so placed at the heads of the classes of words in the Chinese dictionaries. They consist entirely of strokes of the pen, varying in number from one to eighteen, and one or more of these characters enter into the formation of every word. But each of the original characters possesses in itself integral properties—it has a pronunciation, an use, and a meaning of its own. These characters are again divided by the Chinese philologists into six classes, 1st, those that have a resemblance to the object, as horse, house, &c. 2nd, those that describe a quality, as black, large, &c. 3rd, those that express a

combination of ideas, or, rather, perhaps what we would call a complex idea. 4th, those that exhibit in one portion the idea, and in the rest the sound. 5th, those that convey a contrary sense by the inversion of the character; and 6th, those that are metaphorical and allusive. From the 214 elements spring about 1600 primitives, formed of various combinations of the radicals, and these produce from three to seventy-four derivatives, each of which constitute the written language of the Chinese.

It is not very easy to comprehend the combinations by which the characters are so united as to express the full purpose intended in each word; but it is sufficiently evident, that the system, if it do not actually realize a species of philosophy in the use of language, suggests some very profound principles in its application. Thus, under the element or key, which signifies heart, says Mr. Barrow, we shall find all the characters arranged, expressive of the sentiments, passions and affections of the mind; as grief, love, joy, hatred, anger, &c., and so on through the whole vocabulary. From this hint of the formation of the words it will be understood how, of the 40,000 characters to be found in the standard Chinese dictionary, 60 of the elements govern no less than 25,000.

At first, the characters were symbolical, representing objects familiar to the eye; but their habit, and expedition in writing have gradually

deteriorated them, and sunk them into abbreviatives in which they lose much of their clearness. One or two examples may suffice to explain the nature of the Chinese characters, and the way in which they are used: a *hand* and *staff* united, denote a man ruling in his family, or a father:—an *enclosure* and a *man*, a prisoner; to flatter, is satirically composed of *words* and *to lick;* levity, by a *girl* and *thought;* and fortitude, by a *knife* piercing the *heart* and *to bear*. These instances will shew the hieroglyphical and representative nature of the Chinese characters. It is necessary to observe, however, that modern innovation, produced no doubt, by the necessity of adapting their writing to the demands of despatch, have produced great changes in the formation of these hieroglyphics, which are not now nearly so emblematical as they were formerly. The Chinese have different styles of writing, distinguished by names, such as the plain hand, the running hand, the free hand, the antiquated character, and the seal character, which last is the only one that is circular. In writing they use a hair pencil, commence where Europeans would end, and write in separate columns from top to bottom.

The *colloquial* language is distinguished for peculiarities, quite as striking and as much contrasted with all other languages, as those of the *written* language. There are, according to Dr. Morrison, 411 distinct monosyllables, each of which begins with a consonant, and terminates with a vowel, or liquid,

or the double consonant *ng*: in the employment of these, there are four modifications of sound, or intonations, varying according to the signification or application of the syllables, which extends the number to 1644. Beyond this point of change, there is no further inflection whatever, and the same monosyllable, like some harlequin-power in language, takes all the parts of noun, substantive, and adjective, verb and participle, agreeably to the demands of the sentence into which it is introduced, without suffering any further alteration. One writer on the Chinese language, calculates that, taking the number of characters at 40,000, and the monosyllables at 411, there are nearly 100 words that carry precisely the same sound, although they bear entirely different meanings; and 33 that sound nearly alike, the meaning of which is also totally different. From these hints of the internal construction of the Chinese language, some slight idea may be gleaned of its native ambiguity, of the difficulty of arriving at a full knowledge of its resources, and penetrating its spirit. I believe that very few Europeans have ever acquired a complete mastery of its subtle refinements, for the combinations are so numerous, and the collocation of the sentences consequently so embarrassing, that it requires a serious devotion of time, and considerable practice, to obtain facility in using it. Even the Chinese themselves, when they read it aloud, are frequently compelled to atone for the deficiencies, or mysteries

of the written language, by some equivalent and expressive action: but, in conversation, they supply all that is wanted by synonymes, which are ultimately resolved into proper words by habit, rendering the language, as Mr. Myers, in his clever pamphlet on this subject, observes, in "some degree polysyllabic." In China, as in other countries, the pronunciation differs materially in different districts; so that a foreigner who should acquire the pronunciation of Corea, or Japan, would be scarcely understood in the Indian Archipelago, or Cochin China. The best mode is the Mandarin tongue, which is considered to be the most polished, and which may be said, if such a phrase can be employed, to fix the standard. But, the written language is not subject to local modifications of this description. It is the same every where, and is universally intelligible.

It will be seen at once, that the grand point of difference between the Chinese and all other languages, and that feature which, in fact, divorces it from all relationship with other tongues, and insulates it from the rest of the world, is its utter want of *grammar*. As the verb is unchangeable through all its moods and tenses, and the noun remains unaltered, whether it be the *subject*, or the *object* of the verb; so etymology, syntax, and prosody, are entirely unknown to the Chinese. They have no grammar whatever. The only law that

governs the sense of the immutable syllables, is *position*. That which we should call the part of speech, or the part of the verb, is, in the Chinese, determined, not by any modification of its termination, but by the relation it bears to the rest of the sentence. In the use of the noun, those nouns that relate to visible objects, are distinguished by the prefix of a numeral, which could not be rendered into our language without confusing the meaning, or making it appear absurd; and the verbs are designated by auxiliary signs, which are prefixed, or affixed, according to circumstances. The idioms of the Chinese, are, perhaps, the most singular features in their language. But the traveller must become, as it has been expressed, acquainted with the *mind* of China, or, as Voltaire said of the English, he must learn to *think in the language*, before he can enter into the spirit of their colloquial phrases.

One writer upon the Chinese language observes, with great truth, that the uniformity and unvarying character of the written language, has contributed, in some measure, to the unity of the Empire: and there can be little doubt, that were there not some such bond of intelligence amongst a people equal in number to the inhabitants of the whole of Europe, and spread over so vast a space, in scattered and diverging communities, the means of preserving them in one common interest, could not be

certain, or permanent. To their written character, I, therefore, for one, am disposed to attribute much of that universality of feeling, prejudice, and nationality, by which they are everywhere distinguished. Those who have thoroughly examined the merits of the written language, declare, that, in consequence of its being freed from all the smaller particles, and superfluous expressions, that are used in the colloquial tongue, it flashes upon the mind at once; the muscles appearing, as it were, without the flesh, and the vigorous anatomy of meaning being rendered infinitely more clear and complete, than it could be in alphabetic language. This much, however, may be remarked with confidence, that, whether the language contain inherent beauties to reward the labours of the inquirer, or the literature of the Chinese sufficient stores to induce him to prosecute, with perseverance, a task confessedly so difficult, it is still the duty of every person concerned in our Chinese relations, who may happen to possess sufficient leisure for the undertaking, to embark in a diligent study of the tongue. In the first place, it would greatly facilitate British intercourse with the East;—in the second, it would enable us to pursue, with better success, our researches into Chinese history, laws, and customs; and, in the third, and above all, it would enable us to diffuse, by way of translation, throughout the entire empire, a knowledge of our

own literature, our laws, and our religion. These motives ought to be strong enough to tempt the student from other, and less profitable occupations, and to draw him into a study from which hundreds of thousands of men could hardly fail to derive lasting benefits.

CHAP. VIII.

Outlines of Chinese History.

The early annals of the Chinese are certainly the most apocryphal in the world. It is impossible to tell where fiction ends, and truth begins; or rather to detect the few incoherent historical facts that lie scattered in the mass of fabulous crudities. It would be quite beside my purpose—which is to give as intelligible a narration as I can of the chief points of Chinese history—to encumber the text, and harass the reader with a display of the barbarous names that are accumulated in the ancient chronology of the Chinese. My object is to avoid the ambiguity that must necessarily arise from a loose statement of those incongruous legends to which the Chinese are in the habit of referring all the glories of their antiquity; and to trace in a brief space, and with as little confusion as possible, their progress from the earliest period, authenticated by credible historians, to the present time. We shall find, on a review of the whole, two facts worthy of being distinctly remembered: first, that the Chinese have, from the foundation of their empire to this hour, been distinguished by a vain-glorious, and self-abiding spirit, that has diffused itself throughout their manners, customs, and institutions; and, second,

that they are in all essential particulars the same people in the nineteenth century, that they were in the age of Confucius, who lived five centuries and a half before Christ: an extraordinary fact, which is referable in a greater degree than is, perhaps, generally perceived, to the boastful and obstinate spirit above alluded to.

The first regular attempt that was made to reduce to something like order, the cumbrous and scattered materials of Chinese history, was the work of Confucius. He had little to deal with, except the floating traditions of the time. Before he lived, there were no annalists. The mere voice of the transmitted legend, and, perhaps, some fragmentary records, pompous, inflated, and unnatural, were the only authorities to which he could refer. Out of these he created a history, which it is needless to observe, owed its principal charm to his own invention; and, in order to obtain for it the reverence of the people, he threw back the origin of the empire into the mists of the remotest antiquity. The Chinese, flattered by the primeval chaos of their birth, believed the cheat, and continue to hold it sacred.

There is no doubt, however, that China is a very ancient empire; although it is now impossible to find with precision the period from whence their veritable history commences. They divide the whole period of their history into the dynasties that successively occupied the throne, an arrange-

ment that appears to be clear enough, in so far as the naked chronology is concerned, but which is quite inadequate to satisfy the enquirer who wishes to determine the great epocha of their career. A division into dynasties shews nothing more than a list of the imperial families, illustrating the events that swept them from the seat of power; while a division into the eras that produced great changes would exhibit a succession of land-marks to guide us over the crowded scene with security, and perspicuity. Mr. Gutzlaff, in his sketch of Chinese history, adopts the latter plan, and divides the whole into four eras, which he calls the Mythological Era, the Ancient History, the History of the Middle Ages, and the Modern History. This is a division, certainly, but it does not seem to be much more satisfactory than that of the Chinese themselves. It would have been better to have discarded altogether the fabulous trifling of the early legends, and to open the first page with the birth of Confucius, who, however he may have imposed upon the credulity and vanity of his followers, was undoubtedly a man of great powers of mind, and the first person who exercised an influence, in the formation of a consistent account of the empire.

The first Emperors of China—as they are commemorated by tradition—appear to have been in some measure an emanation from heaven. It is not easy to decide whether they were really born in the clouds, or on the earth; or whether the rhapso-

dies they bequeathed to posterity in the shape of laws, and moral lessons, are oracular mysteries, such as the priests of Isis dealt in, or the irresponsible ravings of insanity. Several Emperors succeeded each other, throughout the unknown time, when the empire was growing up, as it were, from infancy; and each of these was distinguished for some particular trait which stamped his reign with glory or disgrace. One Emperor, for example, determined the seasons, and introduced order into the elements; another, who was called the Divine Husbandman, taught his people the arts of agriculture, medicine, and music, while his Empress introduced the manufacture of silk; leaving, in fact, but little for posterity to discover or improve; a third composed a song, and was remarkable as a man, the prevailing element of whose nature was metal; a fourth rectified the calendar of his predecessors; and a fifth could see the most distinct objects, and possessed also the marvellous faculty of understanding, by a species of intuition, the most abstruse things. And if the Chinese historians are to be credited, all these wonders existed before the Flood, and the empire was at that time fully as extensive as it is at the present moment, sweeping from Cochin-China to Tartary; and to the eastward, limited only by the ocean!

But, passing from the reigns of these ambiguous Emperors, who seem to have done things, over which the higher intelligences of their mythology

must have watched with surprise, we arrive at the reigns of two emperors, whose lives we derive from Confucius himself, and who gave an impulse to the character of the people, and their form of government, that has not yet ceased to be felt. As we call Aristides the Just, or Alexander the Great, or Philip the Bold, by *parlance*, so we might call Yaou and Shun, the Virtuous. The glory of their reigns was the glory of a stern virtue which infused itself into all their actions and doctrines. But Confucius is open to the suspicion of having created ideal characters for the sake of impressing upon his countrymen the beauty and importance of virtue. His Yaou and Shun are, probably, no more real representatives of the excellence he attributes to them, than the Machiavel's Prince is of all the wily qualities of consummate intrigue. That there were such rulers is not unlikely—but that they were the persons Confucius describes them to have been, is more than doubtful.

Yaou commenced his reign 2337 B. C. It is to be lamented that the portrait of his character and his life, is like the mixed action and parable of an oriental fable. We can hardly sift its probabilities from amidst its superstitions. He was born under the reign of a red-dragon, which his mother is said to have observed. The Shoo-king, written by Confucius, which contains his history, is the great text-book of the Chinese literati, although it is vague, obscure, and dogmatical, even to darkness.

Some notion, however, of the nature of the doctrines it promulgates may be derived from the fact, that while it recognizes the existence of a Supreme Being, which it clothes with all the attributes of power, and wisdom, and goodness, it teaches the necessity of material worship, ordaining that homage shall be done to the visible universe, the spirits of the mountains, rivers, and seas. The adherence to this sense of the idolatrous has served, in a great degree, to engender and confirm that sensuality and profound barbarism, that still distinguish the Chinese.

Yaou was evidently a popular monarch. He made many journeys through his dominions, lived frugally, dressed without ostentation, taught wisdom and the social virtues; set an example of their value in his own person; cultivated the sciences; promoted the happiness of the people; and dispensed justice with frankness and promptitude. It is not surprising that it should be recorded of such a paragon of sovereigns, that "he ruled the nation as easily as he could turn a finger in the palm of his hand!" The divinities themselves seemed to take an interest in the sublime virtues of Yaou, and showered upon his reign a multitude of omens, bearing, of course, the most extraordinary interpretations. Some barbarians from the south, carried to his court a divine tortoise, upon whose back was inscribed, in strange characters, the history of the world. A plant sprung up, whose blossoms ex-

panded and declined as the moon attained its full age, and disappeared. The phœnix, and the ke-lin, a fabulous quadruped, were the harbingers of good to the people, and appearing in different places rendered his reign miraculously prosperous. Odes were written and sung in his honour, the old wondered and applauded, and the young were lost in joy. In his reign, too, the Deluge took place: that is to say, a great swelling of the waters, which rose so high as to cover the summits of the mountains; but as we have no means of ascertaining the precise date of the event, we are left to conjecture that it was the flood recorded in Holy Writ. Yaou, failing through one agent to disperse the overwhelming tides, sent his son Yu to undertake that mission, and it is stated that the prince, who afterwards became one of the most distinguished of the Emperors, succeeded.

Yaou is stated to have reigned altogether ninety-nine years; but for the last twenty-eight years Shun performed the most laborious parts of the duty. Shun, although he was a descendant from an imperial stock, was in the first part of his life placed in humiliating circumstances, under the domestic tyranny of a step-mother, and half brother; but rising from the humble station of a fisherman and potter, in which he is said to have shewn some extraordinary instances of filial piety, he became at last a participator in the government. The whole story is like a parable to illustrate the value of vir-

tuous actions. During his reign the marshes were drained, and great practical improvements were effected in agriculture, and the mode of collecting the public revenue. He also constructed a celestial sphere, on which the stars were represented by precious stones, and reduced the criminal code to a more consistent shape, diminishing in effect its barbarous character. He appears to have been very modest about the acquisition and retention of power, and to have held it only for the good of the country, and because the popular love forced it upon him. His conversations, which are full of the wisdom of goodness, are preserved at great length in the Shoo-king, which has been translated into the French. He died in the year 2208, B. C. thirty years after the death of Yaou.

To him succeeded Yu, the son of Yaou, who founded the Hea dynasty. Like Shun, who for a long time declined the honours of Imperial State, Yu appears also to have coquetted about the throne, wishing to resign it to the son of Shun; but he was a man of such activity, and had already proved himself to be so worthy of the government, that the people insisted upon his appointment. His birth was, of course, a miracle. His mother saw a shooting star, and dreamt she swallowed a "pearl of great price" at the date of conception. No wonder that Yu grew to the height of nine feet two inches, and was a man of herculean strength and unqualified courage, when the gods themselves took such an interest in

his nativity. He was distinguished for caution as well as bravery, and followed the excellent example of his immediate predecessors in all affairs of state, rewarding merit according to its deserts, and punishing crime with a just measure of retribution. He was at all times so desirous to redress grievances, that he caused a bell to be hung up at the gate of the palace, so that those who had any complaints to make, might ring, and be at once admitted to his presence. Ta-yu was ninety-three when he ascended the throne, and reigning seven years, he died 2198, B.C.

The two next reigns of Te-ke and Tae-kang were distinguished merely by two rebellions, which were speedily suppressed: but the latter monarch became unpopular in consequence of his love of hunting, which led him, incontinently, to ravage the land. He resigned the throne to his brother Chung-kang. A war against two astronomers who failed to record an eclipse, was the only event of his reign worth record. A period of confusion ensued. Te-seang, an imbecile monarch, was succeeded by E, the governor of a district, who deposed him; but E was killed by Han-tsuh, an ambitious man, who panted for the throne. A war for power followed, in which, after many fluctuations, the son of the Emperor was at last proclaimed. But great abuses had crept in during the temporary usurpation of Han-tsuh, and the succeeding reigns were remarkable only for the advantages which bad men

took of the state of the empire, or for the vain attempts at reform which were made by the virtuous.

Këe, a vicious prince, carried his licentiousness to the most extravagant lengths. He built a room for the Empress, coated with jasper, and had in his court, piles of meat, and ponds of wine. A district governor took arms against him, and dethroned him. He fled to ignominious exile, and died in obscurity. His son fled to the northern deserts, where he expired amongst the savages, and the victorious Ching-tang ascended the throne, and having thus extirpated the former race, founded the Shang dynasty. The Chinese historians tell us, that on this momentous occasion, the whole globe underwent a revolution—the earth shook to its centre, mountains tumbled from their base, and the very stars in heaven faded into darkness!

Ching-tang commenced his reign with sacrifices, prayers, and promises. For seven years, during his reign, China was afflicted with a drought. According to the astronomical reports of the time, this calamity was caused by certain demons of the air, who seized the clouds in their hands, and prevented the rain from dropping from them. Ching-tang, however, contrived to manage affairs so well, that the people did not suffer so severely as might have been anticipated; at last he went out alone to a mountain, and praying to heaven for a remission of the evil, rain speedily descended in fertilizing

showers.* Ching-tang died 1753, B. C. and was called the Well-Beloved.

His successor was by nature a vicious person, and a wise minister seized him, confined him with his wife and concubines, in the catacombs of his ancestors; from which, after some years of repentance, he was released and restored to the throne.

The Shang dynasty proceeded for many years afterwards without furnishing any remarkable person or events. Barbarians made occasional incursions, and the Mandarins began gradually to assume extraneous powers as the energy of the princes declined. At length a patriarch, who appears to have been very sensible on one point, his incapacity to govern, declared that he could not continue to rule unless he had a wise minister to guide his councils. He dreamt of such a man, and making a drawing of him, sent officers in all directions in search of this extraordinary, but unknown person. In the course of time, an individual exactly fulfilling the description, was found in the person of a working mason, who was immediately brought before the Emperor, and invested with all the honours of the first minister, the Emperor thanking heaven for sending him so wise an adviser. It so happened, that the mason was a man of considerable knowledge, and a rigid judgment; therefore through his counsels public affairs prospered. Unfortu-

* In a previous chapter I have described, in full, a modern instance of this propitiatory interference of the Celestial Emperor.

nately, however, one of the Emperors exhibited so much impiety, that the Chow family, who were gradually growing into importance and popularity, were looked to as the successors to the throne. The impious monarch is represented to have fired arrows at heaven, in consequence of his prayers having been refused, and to have suspended vessels of blood in the air, so that when the fluid issued, he could persuade the people that he had struck the object of his rage! The last emperor of this race, was so infamous a person, that his minister, Woo-wang, rebelled against him, and heading a powerful army, defeated him in a pitched battle. The Emperor fled into the palace, and died a royal death, amidst precious stones, and a blazing pile, which, like Sardanapalus, he fired with his own hands.

The Chow dynasty succeeded, and lasted from 1122 to 249, B. C.

Woo-wang addressed himself with great skill to the business of government. He restored all that was good in the institutions of his predecessors, and avoided the bad. But in his desire to conciliate all parties, he made the fatal mistake of re-establishing the five orders of nobility, which produced all the baneful consequences that flow from the feudal system. Still, however, China was improved under his auspices; and even the barbarian states, that had hitherto harassed the borders, sent in tenders of allegiance to his government.

The reign of Ching-wang, his successor, was distinguished by a desire to promote the good that had already been accomplished. He stilled the turbulence of domestic broils; received foreign ambassadors, to whom, he is said (fabulously, of course) to have given a box-compass, to direct them on their homeward route; built prosperous cities; and, for the first time, issued metal money. His funeral was conducted with great pomp and solemnity.

In the time of his immediate successors, we find the first mention made of the Tartars of Lesser Bukharia, afterwards destined to be the scourge of the Western World. The Emperor Muh-wang marched an army against them, but they adroitly disappeared, and he found nothing to contend against, but the wild denizens of the desert.

Cruelty and indolence alternately marked the career of succeeding princes; and, under such governments, it was not surprising that the petty states should gradually increase in power, and assume to themselves the rights of sovereignty. The growth of the evil spirit generated numerous complaints, and the Emperor Le-wang adopted the savage method of stopping the increase of remonstrances, by putting every body to death who dared to murmur. Congratulating himself upon this expeditious method of getting rid of national discontent, he is said, on one occasion, to have asked a wise minister if he had not done well in thus crushing the expres-

sion of public opinion. The answer of Chaou-kung, in which are shadowed forth the privileges of a free people in a very admirable way, is worthy of preservation. "This," exclaimed Chaou-kung, "is nothing but a veil, which prevents you from knowing the innermost thoughts; but, remember, that it is more perilous to stop the mouths of the people, than to arrest the rapids of a torrent. By restraining it, you will only cause it to flow over, and do the more injury. If you wish to prevent all damage, you ought to dig a large bed, which can contain all the water. In the same way, those who are charged with governing the people, ought to grant them the liberty of speech. That Emperor may be said to understand the art of government, who permits poets to make whatever verses they please, and to enjoy their harmless pastime; who suffers historians to speak the truth; ministers to give their advice; labourers to talk about their work; and the nation to speak freely. Thus all things will prosper. The tongues of the people are like the mountains and rivers, from whence we dig our riches, and obtain the necessaries of life!" This piece of advice will stand good for all countries, to the end of time. The result is still more admonitory. Le-wang despised the advice of his minister, and continued to oppress the people. The populace, incensed at his conduct, broke into the palace, but the unpopular monarch contrived to escape. The furious mob demanded from Chaou-kung, that he

should deliver up the young son of the sovereign, but the virtuous minister hesitated. At last, pressed hard by the crowd, he gave up his own son instead, who was immediately torn to pieces, and thus the son of the Emperor was preserved.

In the succeeding reign the Tartars passed the borders, stimulated by the growing dissensions of the interior, arising from the increasing feuds of the petty States. They succeeded in defeating the Chinese in one great battle, but were themselves afterwards routed and dispersed. The Chinese, irritated at having been beaten in the first instance, overran their country. This, however, was not sufficient to subdue the Tartars, who were exclusively dedicated to warlike occupations, and who, now that they felt their power, were resolved to carry it into effect. They attacked the frontiers with various success, and distressed the people. They slew one Emperor, and became engaged in a still more decisive war with his successor. But the petty Princes in the mean time were taking up, on their own behalf, the task of extirpating the barbarian invaders. There were now twenty-one independent kingdoms. A long period was filled with their disastrous contentions. The Tartars fought the Princes in detail, and profited of course by the divisions that broke up the common enemy into so many separate troops.

Wearied by the ruinous consequences of these disastrous broils, some of the States resolved to enter

into a confederation to repel the invaders. But it was a long time before their union was effected, so as to produce any practical results. At this period, 552 B. C., Confucius was born, in the principality of Loo. His mother bestowed upon him the title of E-kew (hillock), in consequence of the formation of the crown of his head. His father died when he was only three years of age. As Confucius exercised a great and just influence over the age he lived in; and as with him begins, in reality, the only authentic record of the Chinese history, it will be necessary to enter more at length into the particulars concerning him.

In his youth he is said to have been serious, and rarely to have entered into those amusements that are usual amongst boys, but to have spent much of his time in the examination of ancient records, which, at that period, were engraven on the rind of the bamboo. The great objects of his studies were the principles of good government, and having access by his birth, (he being descended, through his mother, from the illustrious Yu family,) to the courts of the different Princes, he visited them all, with a view to impress upon them the advantages of acting in accordance with those righteous doctrines, which his wisdom suggested as being best calculated to promote the happiness of the people. He was encountered by many mortifications and disappointments, but he pursued his course with untiring zeal, and, even amidst the most depressing

circumstances, exhibited the most ardent spirit of perseverance. He was at length, at the age of fifty-five, appointed Prime Minister in his native kingdom, Loo, and it is recorded that in the course of three years the effects of his advice were visible in the great improvements that were produced in that State. So rapid and complete was the advance of prosperity and morality, that the King of Tse, a neighbouring principality, jealous of the growing power of his rival, sent to the court at Loo some exceedingly beautiful dancing girls, on a mission similar to that recorded by Tasso of the fascinating Armida. The dancers produced the desired effect, and the King of Loo became the slave of their charms. The virtuous Confucius remonstrated in vain, and finding that his salutary warnings were of no avail, he threw up his office, and left the court in disgust. He then applied to three different Governments to obtain a place, in the discharge of the duties of which he might be enabled to render some practical good to his country, but he was repulsed, perhaps, because, as an eloquent writer says of Pitt, "majesty became jealous of his superiority, and conspired to remove him." At length, dispirited by the reception he had met with he went to Chin, where he lived in obscurity and want, and afterwards returned to Loo. By this time, neglected as he was by the Prince, his fame had spread very considerably. He had already three thousand disciples, but only admitted a few of that number to his con-

fidence. He instructed them clearly upon all the arts of life and happiness; the ways of virtue; the wisdom of moral conduct; the mode of speaking and writing with eloquence; and the advantages of judging with discretion and good temper. He carried command and respect in his demeanour; was of an exceedingly fine presence; spoke slowly and judicially; was temperate in his habits; and courteous in his manners; he inspired reverence by the solemnity of his looks, and the inflexible rigour of his principles. He was hated by all those who hated justice, and was once even in danger of being assassinated, on which occasion he is said to have exhibited the utmost coolness and presence of mind. He employed his leisure in the composition of works for the government of men, under all imaginable circumstances, and the arrangement of histories and codes. He compiled the Shoo-king and Chun-tsew—gave a ceremonial code to his countrymen, which has been already described in a preceding chapter; collected the scattered odes, and besides some works on filial piety, he reduced the Yih-king to a system, and composed a part of the four classics. In his last sickness he exhibited resignation and self-possession. He did not wish, he said, that any body should pray for him, as he had prayed for himself; and, deploring the miserable state of his country, he declared that his only regret was that he could no longer be useful upon earth, and that it was necessary he should leave it. His

death, surrounded by his disciples, was the death of a philosopher. He died in his seventy-third year, and was buried on the banks of the Soo river, where his sepulchre was erected.

The great end of the labours of Confucius was directed to the morals of the people, through the agency of their Governors. He desired in the first instance to reform the Governors, that the people seeing the example of decorum in high places, might be induced to imitate it. Perhaps the Chinese are indebted to the very indifference with which he was treated by the princes, for those excellent works he has left behind him. Had he been permitted to counsel in the courts, it is not improbable that his efforts might have ended where they began, but, despised or neglected by the rulers, he addressed all his energies to the ruled. That his system of ethics, his book of ceremonials, and his volumes of history contain a great mass of fabulous and absurd matter, cannot be denied: but it must be admitted at the same time, that he propounded many salutary truths, and some imperishable and homely principles that will be acknowledged to be correct in all times, and by every country to which they may penetrate. Nothing, for example, can be more ridiculous in the present advanced state of knowledge, than some of the crude notions Confucius entertained respecting the planetary system, yet we perceive, even throughout his errors, a struggle to establish upon a clear basis

the harmony of nature, and the great law of design, which subsequent discoveries have satisfactorily demonstrated. It is true that, losing himself in blind speculations, and becoming vain of the single greatness of his state, he drew the people into many false doctrines, and ultimately established a pantheistic code; but when the state of knowledge at that period of time, and the previous prejudices of the Chinese are taken into consideration, it must become evident that Confucius, even if the idea had occurred to him, which it evidently did not, would have found it impossible to wean the ignorant multitude from their Material Religion. He did in fact, in that respect, no more than give a shape and consistency to their creed. He reduced its broken elements to order, he framed a system approaching to intelligence, and at all events, more imposing, tangible, and apparently reasonable, than they possessed before; and if he did not lead them into a more lucid and philosophical faith than they had previously enjoyed, he had the singular merit of giving them fresh modes of exhibiting "the faith that was in them." But it is chiefly as a propounder of moral principles that Confucius is to be regarded. It was in this way that he produced the most extensive and the deepest impressions. His wise sayings are like irreversible maxims. The Chinese dress all their actions, or rather profess to do so, by his laws. Their duties throughout their moral relations, the obligations and responsibilities

of all the officers of state, of masters and servants, and of all reciprocal positions in life, are laid down by Confucius with clearness, and in a tone of decision that leaves nothing to be desired, and nothing to be regretted. Had he done nothing more, he ought to be regarded as one of the greatest benefactors of his species. Enlightened nations might derive instruction from his works, and the wisest men, who, in addition to their natural sagacity, possess the advantages of accumulated knowledge, might refer to his labours for hints upon the great business of existence. In religious matters he appears to have observed constant circumspection. He enjoins the worship of the gods as the one thing needful. He deems the god worshipped of less amount, than the act of sacrifice and adoration. With him the ceremony seems to have taken the place of the feeling it typified, and he avoided with scrupulous care entering upon any explanation as to the force of the doctrines, their origin, or ultimate tendency. The all in all, on matters of religion, was to worship the gods through their works. The images of earthly things, the sun, moon, and stars; temples, beasts, and fishes; all material and visible objects enter the pantheistic scheme, and provided the people duly observed the ceremonials, it did not appear that Confucius cared to desire that their understandings should penetrate farther. He invoked their senses alone, and left their reason for the culture of succeeding ages. Yet

even thus far he improved their capacities by regulating their actions.

This deficiency in the philosophical labours of Confucius appears to have been felt even in his own time, for a contemporary of his, already mentioned, Laou-Keun, attempted to supply the blank in the religious code. Unfortunately, however, Laou-Keun was too mystical to produce any practical results. His system aimed at human perfectibility. He desired to make men virtuous to a paragon of goodness, and even entertained a notion, from having studied the science of alchymy, that he could discover a liquid from whence immortal life might be derived. He was so impressed with the notion of abstracting the human character from the grossness of earth, and of attaining a degree of mental purity never known before, that he withdrew from all communion with his fellow men, and hid himself in lonely mountains, where he prosecuted his delusive studies. He sometimes hints vaguely at the existence of one supreme Deity, and some have thought that they discovered in his writings certain allusions to the Trinity, but this is evidently a gratuitous and ridiculous stretch of critical acumen. His productions are remarkable for incoherency, obscurity, and a repetition of ancient errors, in a new, and by no means intelligible form.

One of the paramount wishes which Confucius had at heart, was to quell the feuds of the Princes, and

unite the empire under one head. He saw that in that project alone lay the salvation of the integrity of the whole; but he was defeated in all his exertions. The feuds raged during his lifetime, and continued after his death. The Chow dynasty was now rapidly drawing to a close. The brazen vases, on which Yu had inscribed the names of the different provinces of China, shone fearfully on one occasion, which was taken as a certain prognostic of the decline of the royal family; and, on another, a mountain fell into the Yellow River, and arrested its course, inundating the country all round, which was seized upon as a reasonable excuse on the part of the rebellious and disaffected, for anticipating the will of Providence in accelerating the ruin of the reigning family.

About 370, B. C. arose Mang-tsze, a disciple of the Confucian doctrine, who occupies a prominent place in Chinese history, on account of the earnestness with which he prosecuted a crusade against what might be deemed the heresies of the day. In youth he discovered extraordinary talents for imitation, and having been brought to live near a public institution, his natural bias was determined in favour of learning. Having studied the Confucian philosophy with great care, his next object was to go abroad, and disseminate it. He exhorted the warlike Princes to peace, and, denouncing selfishness in every shape, he recommended the inculcation and practice of virtue. There were then two sects of

opinionists in China, against whom he entered into open opposition. The one advocated universal love, the other self-interest. He deprecated both. In China the people are linked together in clans, designated *sings*, and all the members of the clans, which are no more than about 400 in number, consider themselves bound to each other by ties of kindred; like those of the Scotch and Irish clans. This union of blood, however, does not produce eventual good will, for while the clans are bound up in their bond of love, they are generally ferociously disposed to each other, probably transmitting ancient feuds from generation to generation. Mang-tsze who, on the one hand, resisted the doctrines of selfishness, thought, on the other, that the actions of benevolence and charity would be equally injured by being spread over too large a surface. He considered it as necessary to circumscribe the sphere of the affections, as he did to avoid crushing them altogether.

He was so energetic a preacher of what he held to be right, and hesitated so little in denouncing the faults of the Prince, that, although he often held office, he was frequently slighted, and never made good his ground anywhere. He claimed no other merit than that of being the disciple of Confucius, than whom he is represented to have been more diffuse and intelligible in his style. His notions of goodness were so utopian, that, during his life, he made but little impression, and failed to work the good for which

he laboured; but after his death he was sanctified and almost elevated to a place amongst the deities.

We have seen how the power of the supreme sovereignty wasted away under the calamitous divisions of the Princes. The throne was so much exposed to internal jealousy, as well as foreign aggression, that it is surprising, not that there should not have been more frequent usurpations and changes of dynasties, but that the empire should have continued to retain even the shadow of an imperial government. When Heen-wang ascended the throne in 368 B. C., the only types of authority he possessed were the brazen vases of Yu, with their idle inscriptions. And he deemed these pagan memorials of vanished power to be so precious and essential that, lest he should be robbed of them, he flung them into a deep lake. It was a prognostic of the downfal of his house. The province of Tsin, and its petty potentate, were becoming more powerful every day. The Emperors, as they succeeded each other, saw that the destiny of the empire was in the hands of the Prince of Tsin, who at last assumed the title of King, and announced his intention to claim the imperial crown. He had but one competitor, the Prince of Tse, who was easily subdued. Chaou-sëang, Prince of Tsin, swiftly carried his conquering army into the capital. The Emperor who had in vain called upon the Princes for help, sued for an ignominious peace, and surrendering his cities and glories to the victorious chief, he fled to retirement

and died. A slight struggle was subsequently made by a kinsman of the Chow family, but their discomfiture was complete, and Chaou-sëang lived long enough to subjugate the rest of the turbulent Princes, and to bequeath the undisputed sovereignty of China to his grandson, Chwang-seang-wang.

CHAP. IX.

Outlines of Chinese History—continued.

The province of Tsin formed one-fifth portion of the empire. Chwang-sëang-wang rivalled his grandfather in atrocity, and in following up the war which he had commenced, met at first with repeated successes. But an alliance having been formed against him, by five of the other States, he was at length defeated, and did not long survive the mortification which it caused him. He was succeeded by the celebrated Che-hwang-te, the son of a female slave, who was presented to the late Emperor by a merchant while she was pregnant, with the sinister hope of seeing a son of his placed upon the throne. The young Emperor was at this time but thirteen years old, but he soon discovered principles of determined despotism. The expostulations of the literati were followed by the execution of twenty-seven of their number, their limbs being exposed outside the palace to strike terror into his subjects. The hereditary Prince of Yen, in consequence of a slight which he received, employed a bravo to assassinate the Emperor, but failing in his project, he was driven from his kingdom, and his family totally exterminated. The other minor

Princes were also gradually subdued, and Che-hwang-te, by the aid of his minister Le-sze, made himself sovereign of the whole empire. He placed the epithet Che, "beginning first," before his title of Emperor. In the year 221 B. C., he changed the Imperial colour into black. Having attained universal dominion, he endeavoured to atone for the sanguinary means which he had used, by turning his attention to the improvement of his country. Astronomy was revived, and many innovations, destructive of the ancient superstitions, introduced. His palace at Hëen-yang, was made a depository for the spoils of the kingdoms he had vanquished, and far surpassed in luxury those of his predecessors. The Huns, known by the ancients as the Scythians, had rendered themselves dreaded by the northern States, among which, in their insatiable thirst after plunder, they had committed much devastation. Che-hwang-te attacking them unexpectedly, found them an easy conquest. It was to prevent their inroads that he built the great wall of China, which remains an enduring monument of his enterprise and perseverance. It is carried for more than fifteen hundred miles over rivers, hills, and valleys, is lined with battlements, and broad enough to permit six horsemen to pass abreast. It terminated in the sea, in which vessels, loaded with ballast, were sunk to create a foundation. The labour of every third man in the empire was required to complete it, which was done in the small space of five years,

240 B. C. The Emperor was often crossed in his desire for innovation, by the remarks of the literati, who dreaded the extinction of ancient customs. Their representations, however, were followed by the destruction of the ancient books, several millions of volumes being committed to the flames; a proceeding on the part of the Emperor which nearly crushed the literature of the country, and threw the Chinese annals into irreparable confusion. He died soon after, in the year 210 B.C. His son Urh-she-hwang-te was dethroned by Lew-pang, a spirited and fortunate adventurer, who had previously commanded a troop of banditti. Urh-she-hwang-te inherited none of the greatness of his father, and finding he could not otherwise escape, stabbed himself. His nephew, Tsze-ying, made a fruitless attempt to withstand the invasion of Lew-pang, and thus ended the Tsin dynasty in the year 206 B. C.

The Han dynasty commenced with Lew-pang, who adopted the name of Kaou-tsoo, and ascended the Imperial throne 202 B. C. His reign was distinguished by new inroads of the Huns, aided by several of his officers, who suffered, however, for their treachery. In 195 B. C. his eldest son Heaou-hwuy-te succeeded him; sunk in effeminacy, he left the reins of government entirely in the hands of his mother, an ambitious woman, whose great talent for government was stained by her excessive cruelty. At his death, without issue, in 188 B. C., she usurped the throne for eight years, being the

first woman who ever reigned over the celestial empire. Her excesses would have entailed upon her a violent death, had she not been carried off by illness in 180 B. C., when Wan-te succeeded her. His reign was marked by an assiduous attention to the welfare of the empire, which was at this time rather impaired. He introduced festivals in honour of the ancient gods, and by a recurrence to ancient rites, rendered himself very popular. In his reign paper was invented by the Chinese. He died in 157 B. C. He was succeeded by King-te, in whose time some unsuccessful rebellions were followed by devastations, caused by repeated earthquakes and swarms of locusts. Woo-tee, his successor, in 141 B. C. shewed himself a friend to learning, though not untainted by native cruelty and superstition. Among the learned men who adorned his reign was Ize-ma-tseen, whose Chinese History was a useful addition to the literature of his country. Woo-tee deputed his son Chaou-te, then but seven years old, his successor, in consequence of his external resemblance to Yaou. In order to secure the succession of this Prince, the Imperial barbarian killed his mother, who would have otherwise ascended the throne! The reigns of Chaou-te, and his uncle, who succeeded him, were marked by foreign invasions and domestic treachery, which their indolence served to encourage. The latter was dethroned by his nobles, and Seuen-te succeeded him in 73 B. C. He reduced the Huns once more to subjection, and

caused a compilation to be made of those ancient classics which escaped the conflagration of Che-hwang-te. His designs in favour of literature were followed up by his successor Yuen-te, 48 B. C. He reigned sixteen years, and was succeeded by his son Ching-te, who, resigning the imperial power to his uncles, indulged in all the sensual and effeminate pleasures which his court afforded him. One of his nobles, who endeavoured to repress his evil inclinations, was sentenced to weed, for two years, the grass from the tombs of his ancestors. Ping-te, the grandson of Yuen-te, came to the throne in the year of our Saviour's birth. He was but nine years old, and the administration was placed in the hands of an ambitious noble Wang-mang, who secretly poisoned the young Emperor; and, being appointed regent during the minority of his successor, succeeded at length in usurping the throne. He did not long enjoy the fruits of his usurpation, but met with a violent death in the year A. D. 23. The reign of Kwang-woo-te was signalised, among other rebellions, by a fruitless attempt on the part of two sisters, of royal extraction, to free the province of Cochin-China. He died A. D. 58. His son Ming-te, who succeeded him, adopted the Buddhist superstition, which prevails in China to the present day. In the reign of Ho-te, who ascended the throne in A. D. 89, a lady named Pan-hwuy-pan distinguished herself as the authoress of a Chinese History and other works. Their value may be inferred from

her instructions to her own sex, whom she characterised as the degraded and worthless portion of the species, and to whom she enjoins the most abject submission. She was highly patronized, however, by the Emperor, and is still one of the most favourite writers. With such an object of admiration, can the barbarity of the people remain a matter of wonder! This reign was followed by several minorities, during which the empire was left a prey to invasion and misgovernment. It appears to have been a custom to seat boys upon the throne, in order to obtain the opportunities of oppression which a regency afforded. The young Emperors were immersed in sensual habits, whilst the reins of government were entrusted to ambitious and unprincipled eunuchs. In the reign of Ling-te, who ascended the throne A. D. 168, at the age of twelve years, the Empress-dowager was murdered by these personages; who, being accused of the crime by the literati, caused a thousand of them to be executed. Upon the death of this Emperor in 189, the Empress and the young prince, who was heir to the crown, became the victims to a revolutionary conspiracy, which placed Hëen-te upon the throne. He was, however, but a tool in the hands of Tung-cho, who proved himself a monster, to whom the shedding of human blood was an every day amusement. He was at length beheaded, though his party was so strong, that it required no little exertion to suppress it. Hëen-te abdicated the throne

A. D. 220, in favour of Tsaou-pe, who was shortly after superseded by Lew-pei, in whose reign the commencement of foreign intercourse took place at Canton, and the art of printing from blocks was invented. In the year 255, the Emperor How-te, pressed by invasion and internal weakness, resigned his power to the prince of Wei, by which act the Han dynasty became extinct; it was during this period that the most celebrated literary men were produced by China.

The Tsin dynasty commenced under Woo-te, who compelled the prince of Wei to abdicate the throne. Hwuy-te, his successor, was swayed by his wife, Kea-she, a woman of unparalleled cruelty. The Huns, who were gradually becoming more civilized, renewed their destructive inroads. In 307, Hwae-te came to the throne. He was attacked by the King of Han, who took him prisoner, and caused himself to be proclaimed. Hwae-te was soon after assassinated, but the usurper did not remain in possession of the crown, which was wrested from him by a member of the Tsin family, named Min-tè, in the year 313. Min-te found the affairs of the Government at his accession in a miserable condition, and in despair yielded himself up to Lew-tsung, and was soon after assassinated. In 318, the Governor-General Sze-ma-juy was unanimously chosen Emperor by the people. His reign was a scene of conspiracy and trouble, and closed in 322, when Ming-te ascended the throne, among

numberless plots, which, however, he succeeded in suppressing. He died in 325, and was succeeded by three minorities. Gae-te, who came to the throne in 362, reigned but three years, having hastened his death by the use of an "ambrosial" liquid, which he supposed would render him immortal. Heaou-woo, a weak prince, ascended the throne at the age of fourteen. After a reign of twenty years, he was strangled in bed by one of his wives, whom he threatened to repudiate, the lady having made him drunk to effect her purpose. His son Gan-te succeeded him in 396. He was strangled in his palace, and succeeded by his brother Kung-te, who ascended the throne in 419. Lew-yu, an ambitious general, had long meditated the usurpation of the crown, and employed a person to assassinate the Emperor. The attempt failed; but he returned to the capital with his forces, and Kung-te, to save his life, abdicated the throne in his favour, and thus ended the Tsin dynasty.

Lew-yu, who founded the Sung dynasty in 420, adopted the name of Woo-te. Soon after his accession, he poisoned the Ex-Emperor, whom he did not long survive, however, bequeathing the crown to his son Shaou-te in 422. This prince was considered unworthy of the throne, and his brother Wan-te was placed in his stead. Wan-te proved himself a patron to useful learning, by the erection of colleges, and an attempt to suppress the doctrines

of Buddhism. He was murdered by one of his sons in 454. The brother of this unnatural prince revenged his father's death, and seated himself on the throne. He raised the empire to a more flourishing condition, but brought on his death by debaucheries in 465. His son Fe-te succeeded him, and rendered his name notorious for ferocity. He murdered all who fell under his displeasure, and was slain by one of his eunuchs. Ming-te, his successor, in 466, was equally noted for a savage thirst for blood. He killed fourteen of his nephews, whose rivalry he dreaded. Tsang-woo-wang, who came to the throne in 472, shared the ferocious nature of his predecessors; with an insane savageness, he often ran through the streets, killing all who came in his way. He met at length with a violent death, and was succeeded by his adopted son Shun-te in 477. This Emperor reigned but two years, when he was obliged to abdicate by his general Seaou-taou-ching, who founded the Tse dynasty in 480.

Seaou-taou-ching adopted the name of Kaou-te, and was distinguished for the excellence of his government, which lasted, however, but two years. In the reign of his son Woo-te, lived the philosopher Fan-chin, who taught the doctrines of materialism and fatalism, which still prevail among the higher classes of the Chinese. The grandson of this Emperor was dethroned in 492 by Seaou-lun, who died in 499, of a nostrum, administered to him by the priests, leaving his son Paou-Keuen

on the throne, which he had usurped. He was dethroned by his general Seaou-yen, who founded the Leang dynasty in 502.

On the accession of Seaou-yen, he assumed the name of Leang-woo-te, and to secure the possession of the empire, entered into a protracted contest with the Prince of Wei. He embraced the doctrines of Buddhism, became a priest of that superstition, and entered into a monastery, from which he was forced by his nobles, to resume his imperial duties. His son Këen-wan-te, who succeeded him, was slain by his general How-king, who sought to obtain the crown. He was, however, defeated and slain; and Yuen-te ascended the throne in 552. A new usurper started up, named Chin-pa-sëen, to whom Yuen-te surrendered himself. The latter was beheaded, and his brother King-te, who next mounted the throne, finding his power merely nominal, yielded his title to Chin-pa-sëen, who founded, in 557, the Chin dynasty.

Chin-pa-sëen, having seated himself on the throne, adopted the name of Kaou-tsoo, but did not long enjoy his usurped dominion, which he left, in 559, to his nephew Chin-tsëen, or Wan-te, who was esteemed a wise and judicious prince. His son Pe-tsung, who succeeded him in 566, was young and imbecile, and was deposed in 568 by his uncle Chin-heu. During the reign of the latter, the principality of Chow became extinct. His son How-te ascended the throne in 582, but his time

was devoted solely to pleasure, being passed with his women and eunuchs, in the erection of sumptuous apartments, and planting delicious groves. With him ended the Chin dynasty. Yang-këen, marching to the capital, which he took without resistance, found the Imperial family concealed in a well; he granted them their lives, and mounted the throne in 590.

Yang-këen, the founder of the Suy dynasty, united the Northern and Southern empires, greatly to the dismay of the Tartar chiefs, whose invasions he succeeded in repelling. His son, the rightful heir, was strangled by his brother Yang-kwan in 604, and the latter having seized the sceptre, buried himself in the luxurious pleasures of his gardens, in which he amused himself riding about, with a train of 1000 damsels.* Satiated with voluptuous-

* This species of voluptuousness was not confined to the Emperors. We find in other parts of Chinese history, that even the Governors of provinces indulged themselves with fantastic pleasures of this kind, to a still greater degree. I take the following illustrative anecdote, for a specimen, "Shih-hoo, a Governor of the Chaou principality, erected a magnificent palace, with all the splendour of the East, where more than ten thousand people lived, among whom were the most beautiful damsels, dressed in sumptuous robes, soothsayers, and astrologers, with a number of nimble bowmen. But the most remarkable corps, was a regiment of tall and slender ladies, who, mounted on horseback with splendid trappings, and elegant robes, to set off their fine figures, served him for a body guard. When he went out, these females played upon instruments, and entertained the guests at his sumptuous table. At the same time his people were starving."

ness, he busied himself in expeditions against the Koreans, who were inclined to dispute his authority. He was slain while making a tour through the empire, and Le-yuen, one of his generals, placed the crown on the head of Kung-te in 617, reserving to himself the administration as Prime Minister, and Regent. This power was but a stepping-stone to sovereign sway, and Kung-te fell a victim to the ambition of Le-yuen, who founded the Tang dynasty in 619.

Le-yuen, whose great military talents had rendered him an object of dread to his predecessors, had been employed by them in repelling the invasions of the Tartar and other rapacious tribes, among whom he acquired a fame as a warrior, which served to raise him to the throne. Within six years after his accession, he brought the whole Celestial Empire under his subjection, and was frequently engaged in preserving his country from the attacks of the Turkish hordes, whose barbarous power was becoming, at this period, intractable, and extending in every direction. Kaou-tsoo, his successor, encouraged the cultivation of the arts and sciences; and after repelling the repeated inroads of the Tartars, died in 649. Kaou-tsung who then ascended the throne, was a warlike emperor. He carried his victorious arms as far as Persia; and reduced the Taofan tribe, or Tibetians, to subjection. He was succeeded in 684 by Chung-tsung, a weak and debauched prince, whose mother seized

the reins of government, and kept him in confinement. On his death, in 710, his brother Juy-tsung, came to the throne, and was followed by Heuen-tsung, who commenced his reign with the encouragement of literature and the erection of colleges, and ended it with drowning his Empress and her children, thereby incurring the Divine vengeance in the shape of a rebellion, which placed his son Tih-tsung on the throne. His successor, Shun-tsung, abdicated, after a reign of one year, in favour of his son Hëen-tsung, who displayed a strange mixture of superstition, and good government. He reformed the various offices of the state, and inquired into the proceedings of the Mandarins. He was tainted, however, with the fanaticism of Buddha, and having heard that a finger of that personage was preserved in the province of Shen-se, he caused the relic to be conveyed to the capital in a magnificent procession. Soon after this he drank the elixir of immortality, by which he was poisoned. Several of his successors, with similar folly, entailed upon themselves the same fate. The eunuchs had, of late years, possessed unlimited power over the dynasties, being accustomed to select, as Emperor, the most imbecile prince, in order to secure their own authority. Seuen-tsung, who, like Brutus, affected idiotcy, was raised by them to the throne, and soon after his accession, testified the error of their choice, by an attempted extirpation of all the eunuchs about his court. He failed, however, and sought

refuge in the immortal elixir. Chaou-tsung, who ascended the throne in 888, was imprisoned by the eunuchs in a hole, with only a small aperture, through which he received his food; escaping from this durance, through the intervention of his prime minister, he invoked the aid of the public robbers, to whom the eunuchs were consigned, and but few of their number escaped the general slaughter. Chaou-tsung was soon after murdered by Choo-wan, Prince of Leang, who raised Chaou-seuen-te to the throne in 905. This prince abdicated shortly after in favour of Choo-wan, and thus put an end to the Tang dynasty.

The five succeeding dynasties are termed by the Chinese, *Woo-taè*, or "the five ages." They are distinguished as the How-leang, How-tang, How-tsin, How-han, and How-chow, and their history discloses little else than the usual train of invasions from without, and rebellions within, the empire; with cruelty and imbecility on the part of the reigning princes, unparalleled in the history of any other nation. The last of the How-tang dynasty, who had made his way to the throne by the murder of his brother, being himself attacked, in the year 936, collected all the imperial badges, to which he set fire, and committed himself, wife, and family to the flames.

The Sung dynasty was founded by Chaou-Kwang-yin, a celebrated general, during the minority of Kung-te, in the year 960. He was a friend to learn-

ing, and opposed luxury in every shape, setting an example to his subjects, by restrictions in his own family. He was engaged in many wars with the subordinate princes, and died in 976, leaving his son, Tae-tsung, in possession of the crown. This prince was succeeded by Chin-tsung, in 997; he was an exceedingly weak prince, and consented to pay the Tartars a tribute, to avoid their incursions. He rendered himself ridiculous by his credulity, preserving with great care, two books, wrapped in yellow silk, which he believed had fallen from heaven, and contained the destiny of the Sung dynasty. By a census which he made, in 1014, of all the families who paid tribute, the number was found to be 9,955,729. He died in 1022, and the celestial books were buried with him. His immediate successors were only characterised by the usual imbecility of the sovereigns of the Celestial Empire. In the reign of Chin-tsung, learning was patronized, though a belief in materialism disputed possession with the idols. Hwuy-tsung, who ascended the throne in 1100, revived once more the power of the eunuchs, on whom he conferred the principal offices of state. He was taken prisoner in an expedition against the Tartars, in 1125. His son, Prin-tsung, in vain attempted his liberation, and the repulsion of the Tartars, who were making periodical encroachments on the empire. His brother succeeded him in 1127, and endeavoured by servile adulation, to bring the invading hordes

to a treaty. He styled himself Chin, "Servant," in addressing them, but he could not repel their attacks. In the reign of Heaou-tsung, 1162, lived the celebrated commentator Choo-he, whose writings on the classics are much esteemed. Ning-tsung invited the Mongols, in 1194, to drive the Kin Tartars out of China. They did so, but retained the country, which they had occupied, for themselves. They were headed by the invincible Genghis Khan, who brought province after province under his subjection, amidst the most terrible carnage. In the reign of Too-tsung, 1266, the Tartars were led on by the celebrated Kublai Khan, grandson of Genghis, while the Chinese Empire was going to ruin, under a weak and licentious prince. Kublai pursued his designs in China without intermission, both by sea and land, and in 1277, during a minority, his fleet took possession of Canton. At length, in 1279, the Chinese fleet was completely destroyed, and Loo-sew-foo, the prime minister, jumped overboard with the young Emperor, to prevent their falling into the hands of their conquerors. Thus ended the Sung dynasty, and a Tartar prince seated himself on the throne of China.

Kublai Khan—Che-yuen—was but twenty-seven years old when he founded the Mongol or Yuen dynasty, 1280. Having firmly seated himself on the throne, he laid aside the sword, and endeavoured, by peaceful measures, to win the hearts of his subjects. But, in consequence of his bestowing all the pro-

vincial governments upon his Tartar and Saracen followers, the natives regarded him with a feeling of hatred, which no benefits he conferred upon them could ever eradicate. Shortly after his accession, he was called into the field to quell a conspiracy which was formed against him by his uncle, Nayan, who attacked him with an army of 400,000 horse. With about an equal force he obtained a signal victory over the rebel, who, on being taken prisoner, was shaken between two carpets until he expired: this mode of execution was used, lest the sun and air should witness the shedding of the blood of one of the Imperial family. Those of his troops who survived, swore allegiance to Kublai. This Emperor's thirst for conquest did not forsake him after his attainment of the Chinese sceptre. Having determined on bringing Japan to subjection, he armed four thousand vessels, and despatched them for that purpose. The result was a miserable failure. The greater number of the ships were wrecked, and most of the soldiers who escaped from them were massacred by the Japanese, while those that survived were only spared to be retained in slavery. The desire to engage the minds of his subjects, who were much inclined to rebellion, caused him to keep them continually in a state of warfare. The Chinese empire was never so extensive as in his reign. From the Frozen Sea, almost to the Straits of Malacca, his dominion was undisputed. All the Mongol Princes, as far as the Dnieper, with the

exception of those of Hindostan, Arabia, and the western parts of Asia, yielded him tribute, as his vassals. Busied thus with warlike projects, he did not neglect the arts of peace. He encouraged the study of astronomy, for which he caused new instruments to be made, and suppressed the Taou sect, which kept the people in a degraded state of delusion, though it cannot be denied that he was weak enough to adopt the doctrines of Buddhism. His wise policy was insufficient to suppress the mutinous spirit of the Mongols, against whom he was frequently obliged to carry his arms. This rebellious spirit was such a source of annoyance to him that it accelerated his death, in 1294. He was succeeded by his grandson, Timur-Khan—Yuen-Ching—a weak prince, yet untainted with bigotry, which he testified by reducing the Buddhist priests, as well as those of Taou, to a level with the lower orders. He endeavoured to suppress the numerous bands of robbers, who had become so daring as to lay siege to the imperial cities, and treated the rebellious Mongol chiefs with great severity. In 1307 he was succeeded by Woo-tsung, who resigned himself to wine and women, and brought the priests once more into power. At his death, in 1311, his brother, Jin-tsung, came to the throne. He encouraged the doctrines of Confucius, and erected colleges and schools for their diffusion, which was further enjoined by express edicts. The works of the philosopher were translated into the Mongol language,

and titles were conferred upon those who were well versed in their contents. This emperor died in 1320, and was succeeded by his son Ying-tsung, a young prince of much promise, who was assassinated in his tent, in 1323. His successor, Ye-sun-temur found the palace filled with lazy priests, eunuchs, and astrologers, whom his ministers, after much persuasion, succeeded in causing him to banish from the country, which was nearly overrun with Lamas, who preyed upon it like a swarm of locusts. At his death, 1328, his second son, Too-temur, was proclaimed emperor, but to prevent a dispute he yielded the diadem to his elder brother Ho-chila, who gave a sumptuous banquet on the day of his accession, at which he suddenly dropped down dead, as many suppose from poison. Too-temur next assumed the reins of government, which he held but feebly, abandoning himself to the control of the priests. His superstition and misrule were the origin of many rebellions, which not long after produced the fall of the Mongol dynasty. He died in 1332. To-hwan-temur was a still more worthless prince, and but thirteen years old when he ascended the throne. While he was indulging in degrading pleasures, his people were suffering from accumulated distress, principally caused by famine, which was so great in 1342, that they were obliged to feed upon human flesh. The spirit of insubordination was not slow in spreading through the empire, and the coasts and rivers were infested

by pirates, who are said to have had 10,000 vessels under their command. A member of the Sung family proclaimed himself emperor, but his reign was of short duration. Several of the Mongol chiefs made a like attempt, but failed, after the commission of many excesses. The emperor fled, at length, in 1368, before the victorious arms of Choo-yuen-chang,* and died two years afterwards.

* This prince was also called Hung-woo, and received the name of Tae-tsoo—Grand Sire—in "the Hall of Ancestors." The founder of the Leang Dynasty had five national designations bestowed on him, and some emperors have even exceeded that number.

CHAP. X.

Outlines of Chinese History—concluded.

The Mongol tyranny now drew to its close: and with this auspicious period begins the modern history of China. Hung-woo, a poor labourer who had enlisted in the army, and who acquired a reputation for courage which procured him rapid promotion, conceived the design of forming a party to expel the barbarians. He speedily carried his project into effect, gave a pitched battle to the Mongols, in which he entirely defeated them, and overrunning the country, wherever the Mongol soldiers were to be found, he extirpated the whole race, and ascended the throne, laying the foundation of the Ming Dynasty. His wisdom cemented the empire which his bravery had won. China was now in a condition of unprecedented prosperity. Ambassadors from the King of Korea, and the Loo Choo Islands were received at Court, 1383. Hung-woo, the gallant vindicator of his country's freedom, conferred lasting benefits upon the empire, throughout a long and vigorous reign, and was succeeded by his grandson Keën-wăn-te, in 1398. There was but one point of weakness in Hung-woo. His attachment to his children led him to bestow principalities upon them, which were ultimately pro-

ductive, as experience might have warned him, of fresh discord.

The young emperor was exposed to the immediate jealousy of his uncles, who entered into a conspiracy against him, but he adopted at once the energetic measure of depriving them of their principalities. But this bold step produced a rebellion, headed by one of the princes, and when the hostile force had reached the gates of the capital, Nan-king, the emperor was compelled to sue for mercy. But victory was in the hands of the enemy, and the city was deluged with blood. All the adherents of the young monarch were put to death. Yung-lo, the new emperor, was a man of considerable military talent: he carried fire and sword into the northern plains of the Tartars, and reduced Cochin-China, and Tunkin, to Chinese provinces. He next passed into the desert wastes of Tartary, and having concluded a campaign of mere territorial aggrandizement, he returned home in 1425, and died. His immediate successors found some difficulty in governing Cochin-China, which proved rather a harassing dependency; and when a young emperor, with a favourite eunuch, at the head of 500,000 men marched against a large army of Tartars, who, inspired by their dissensions, advanced into China, he was made prisoner, and the conqueror marched direct upon Peking. In the mean time, 1450, King-te ascended the throne, made head against the enemy, and released the

emperor, who, however, surrendered the imperial honours to his deliverer. But he was subsequently induced to re-ascend the throne, in consequence of the remonstrances of the nobility. Choo-keën-shin, his successor, established an inquisition of eunuchs which gave great offence to the mandarins; and in the following year the doctrines of the Taou sect, who sought after the draught of immortality, were revived. At this period a census was taken which shewed that China contained a population of 53,000,000 of inhabitants.

The rest of the Ming dynasty was distinguished by civil wars, and attempts to revive the superstition of the water of eternal life. But a most important event was the incursion of the Japanese, who, taking advantage of the state of the empire, descended upon the maritime stations, and made great ravages. In 1592 they invaded Korea, where they made a successful stand, and declared themselves masters of the kingdom. A Chinese fleet hovered between Japan and Korea, while a Japanese squadron ranged along the Chinese coast; at last, after a delay of five years, the enemy evacuated Korea, and the emperor of Japan was denounced by the arrogant Chinese as a traitor. The celebrated Ricci arrived in China about this time, and attempted to disseminate the doctrines of the church of Rome, but he was rejected by the court. In 1618, the Mantchoo Tartars resumed hostilities, attacking and defeating the Chinese forces. The

confusion and consternation created by these circumstances, inspired a numerous band of native robbers with confidence. They collected a large army, and ravaging several provinces, their chief leader, Le, was proclaimed emperor by a body of the Imperial troops that had flocked to his standard. The rebel marched to the capital, and after a scene of dreadful carnage, obtained entrance through the treachery of an eunuch. The Emperor seeing that all was lost, strangled himself, having first killed his daughter with a sword, that she might not survive the disgrace. The Empress also committed suicide, and the royal example was followed by a faithful eunuch. Thus ended the Ming dynasty, whose rule was much more contracted than that of its predecessors, owing to the weakness of the emperors, and the domestic feuds of the princes.

While these events were taking place at Peking, the Mantchoo Tartars, assisted by a Chinese general, who vowed to revenge the fall of his master, prepared to make war against Le. The progress of the troops was rapid, brilliant, and successful, and the usurper being compelled to fly, the Tartars, in violation of their engagement with their Chinese ally, seized upon the throne. They proclaimed the ninth son of their King, Tae-tsung, a boy seven years of age, Emperor of China, in the year 1644. Some attempts were made to dethrone him, but he succeeded in founding the Ta-tsing

dynasty, which has lasted from that time to the present day. The victories of the Tartars over those Princes who ventured to dispute their power were signal and sanguinary. On one occasion they put a Prince to a most revolting death, and wherever they went, they carried devastation. They might be said to have built up their throne upon human bodies. Several Princes, seeing no hope in their desperate circumstances, put themselves to death, while whole masses of troops were driven into rivers, or famished in besieged towns. At length, the Princes of Chin, Yih, and Leaou, called a solemn assembly at Canton, and proclaimed Choo-yue-gaou, brother of one of the Ming Princes, Emperor. The Tartars, hearing of this daring act, proceeded to Canton, and put the Princes to death; but advancing further into the province, and treating the Chinese soldiers with contempt, they suffered several defeats, and were finally nearly annihilated. This was a signal for fresh insurrections. A new Emperor was announced, and those who followed him cut off their tails—the badge of Mantchoo servitude. But all attempts to shake off the Tartar yoke were fruitless. The new Emperor, Yung-leit, embraced Christianity, and his chief officers were Christians. His conversion, announced to the Pope in a letter written by his wife and mother, took place in 1649. This unfortunate Prince was afterwards strangled in an enterprise he undertook into a neighbouring province.

A robber chieftain, who under the title of Se-wang, proclaimed himself Emperor, took possession at this time of the province of Sze-chuen, and gave considerable trouble to the Tartars. He massacred all the literati within his reach, put whole regiments of soldiers to death, when one of the body happened to displease him, and also a whole assembly of Buddhist priests, whom he had invited to an entertainment. When one of his generals, terrified by his cruelties, deserted to the Mantchoos, he, by way of revenge, committed a carnage in the capital, in which 600,000 persons lost their lives. Such were the horrors of a period of unexampled barbarism; but the worst remains to be told. At the approach of the Mantchoos, he butchered 400,000 females, first making an example of his own concubines, for the sake of getting rid of the incumbrance; and for this, and all his other acts of cruelty, he was assassinated in the front of the ranks by one of his own soldiers. The Tartars took possession of his usurped property, and the brigands disappeared.

The Tartars now adopted measures of pacification. They had yet, however, to subjugate Canton, which, although the governor, a descendant of Confucius, advised the people to send in their adherence, sustained a siege of eight months, being protected by a very powerful fleet. A traitor, however, within the walls, betrayed the city, and it was given up to pillage in 1650. The next achieve-

ment of the Tartars was at Nan-King, whence they made a sally in the night, and drove out the warlike Ching-ching-kung, who, master of a great squadron, had long hung like a cloud upon the coast. By degrees the empire now began to subside into repose. The Tartars encouraged the sciences, and widely profited by the knowledge of the people whom they had vanquished. It is to be observed, however, that whenever Ambassadors were sent to their court, they rejected them if they refused to make those prostrations which the sovereignty of the Celestial Empire demands from foreigners. Their civilization was confined within their own notions of right and wrong; they accorded nothing to the state of civilization elsewhere.

In the reign of Kang-he, a conspiracy was detected at Peking, in which a vast number of Chinese had joined. The project was to have been carried into effect on new year's day, when the mandarins and grandees had repaired to the Imperial palace. The conspirators intended to take advantage of the concourse, and to put the whole assembly to death. Had their plan succeeded, it is not improbable that the Chinese, acquiring confidence from success, might have wrested the throne, by the force of numbers, from the hands of the Mantchoos; but the plot was discovered, and its ringleaders executed. The provincial governor, however, who was the chief mover of the plan, escaped, and organising a strong army, in which he

was assisted by other potentates, prepared to make head against the Emperor, while in the north, the borders were threatened by a descent of the Mongolians. If these forces had not been distracted by private feuds, and if Kang-he had not been a resolute and energetic man, the sovereignty must have been placed in danger a second time. But the Princes were so divided amongst themselves, that they fell an easy prey to the well-directed and courageous troops that the Emperor brought into the field.

It may fairly be suspected that the statistics of the Chinese historians are of doubtful value. In their accounts of great battles, they describe so frightful an amount of carnage, that it is difficult to place any reliance upon their statements. The slaughter of a small city suggests to the chronicler many hundreds of thousands; and a plague at Pekin, which happened shortly after these rebellions, is said to have swallowed 400,000 persons. We have no means of rectifying these assertions, but we may be permitted to question their accuracy.

It was the policy of the Tartars to prohibit foreign commerce. The Prince of Canton, whose position near the mouth of a navigable river in direct communication with the sea, held a different opinion; and permitting commercial intercourse to be carried on with Foreigners, he had, in a few years, amassed a considerable fortune. This offence against the laws was not to be forgiven. The Tartar troops were

drawn out, when a silken cord, transmitted by the Emperor for that purpose, was handed to the Prince, who was led forth, and strangled himself on the spot. One hundred of his officers suffered a similar death. This was, at least, a very intelligent hint to all future governors, upon the subject of commercial dealings.

The only place within convenient reach of the Chinese empire that had, up to this time, maintained its independence, was Formosa, which nine years previously had yielded before the armies of Ching-ching-kung. A viceroy was sent from Peking to subdue it, and, after repeated attempts, he at last succeeded. The governor submitted, was summoned to the capital, and, contrary to custom, treated with great clemency and kindness, the Emperor extending his generosity so far as to create him a Count. The possession of Formosa, which is an extremely fertile island, has proved to be very valuable to China.

The next undertaking of the Emperor's was a descent on the Eleuths, and Kalkas, who had long disturbed the repose of the country. He suddenly crossed the great wall, and falling upon them before they were aware of his approach, he utterly discomfited them. Throughout the whole of these warlike movements, the Emperor zealously cultivated the sciences, particularly mathematics. Nor did his cruel acts of revenge divert him from the pursuit of knowledge. After sacrificing to his

ambition in the morning, by putting hordes of enemies and rebels to death, he is described to have enjoyed himself in abstruse study with the Jesuits, whom he encouraged, in the evening.

The influence of the Imperial throne was greatly increased by these intestine broils, which terminated without a single exception in favour of the Emperor. The strength of the empire was now consolidated for the first time under a single head, acknowledged by all parties. It was the moment to improve the administration of domestic affairs, and, by taking advantage of the calm, to acquire means for future enterprises. The Emperor, to increase his popularity, made repeated tours into the provinces, and endeavoured to give a stimulus to literary men, but unfortunately the soil he worked upon was barren, for there was no creative genius in China. He published a Chinese dictionary, and, apprehending that his native language might fall into disuetude, he also published a dictionary of the Mantchoo. He had maps made of the provinces, which are said to have been equal in accuracy to European maps of the eighteenth century.

While he was absent in Tartary, in 1701, his eldest son organized a conspiracy against his brother with a view to secure the throne to himself. His brother was in consequence cast into prison, but the Emperor discovering that he had been deceived, condemned his eldest son to perpetual imprisonment. These domestic griefs preyed upon his

spirits, and he nearly sunk under a malady from which he was preserved only by the skill of the Jesuits. Some years afterwards his generals reduced Thibet, and annexed it to the empire, which was the last act of glory in his reign. At the close of the summer of 1722, he was attacked by a blast of the northerly wind, and died on the 20th of December, bequeathing the empire to his fourth son, Yung-ching.

To Kang-he belongs the merit—achieved through a very devious course of good and evil—of vanquishing all the enemies of China; increasing its territory; consolidating the state; improving its finances; and diminishing the pressure of taxation. He may, with historical truth, be said to have been the greatest monarch that ever occupied the Imperial throne. When he came to the sovereignty, he found the country impoverished by protracted wars, the people discontented and divided, and destitute of all hope of accomplishing the desirable objects of peace and security. When he died, China was prosperous, united, and happy. Much of his success must be attributed to his wise choice of ministers. He did not hesitate to derive artizans from Europe, and to encourage the Jesuits at his court, to whose knowledge he was largely indebted for the course he pursued. But the good which he did in this way was rapidly shaken by his successor, who inherited all the ignorance and prejudice of the earlier times of Pagan idolatry.

Yung-ching addressed himself in the first instance to the extirpation of Christianity, which he hated, and which was making rapid strides in the empire. For this purpose he banished all the Missionaries. But, with the exception of this rooted aversion to the religion of Europe, he was in other respects a just and benevolent Prince. He alleviated the misery of prisoners, conferred rewards wherever they were deserved, advanced his officers on account of their merits, and encouraged the industrious classes. He seems to have been a Malthusian, even before the doctrines of that philosophy were expounded, for we find amongst his acts of charity, that he bestowed premiums upon all widows who refused to marry a second time. The Empress aided him in these works of kindness, by bestowing similar favours upon the oppressed and destitute of her own sex. It is related of him, however, that although he was a paternal governor, he exhibited strong personal prejudices, as in the case of a particular family, against whom he conceived so violent a hatred that he never ceased to persecute them. He died in 1753, and went to the grave unlamented, having failed to impress upon the people any lasting feelings of reverence or respect.

He was succeeded by Këen-lung, a warlike prince, who signalized himself at once, in a descent upon the Kalmuks, more than a million of whom, according to the *voracious historians*, fell under his arms. The war terminated in 1757, and the kingdoms of

the Kirghiz Kairaks, Booroots, and Khokards, acknowledged the supremacy of China, which now surveyed a dominion of greater extent than was ever before known.

Further employment for the troops was found in Little Bukharia, into which the Emperor penetrated for the purpose of subjugating two Mohammedan Princes, who had dared to raise the standard of rebellion. A part of the conquered territory was added to the province of Kan-suh, and the remainder constitutes the present site of the eight Mohammedan cities. These victories were distinguished by isolated acts of mere brutality, which marked the spirit in which they were undertaken and achieved.

A war now broke out on the border lands of Ava, and Yun-nan. It is not improbable that Këen-lung, who loved to be engaged in conflicts, sought this war upon some slight pretext; but it is endeavoured to be excused on the ground of the frequent incursions of the Birmahs. However that may be, a large army, made up of Chinese and Mantchoos, entered Birmah, in 1797, and were nearly cut to pieces, only a few remaining alive, to return home with the tragical story of their companions' fate. Këen-lung, however, resolved to persevere, and embarked another army upon the Kin-sha river. This expedition was as unfortunate as the former. The soldiery were swept away by the jungle fever, and the General was glad to conclude a peace upon

any terms, with an enemy who seemed equally fortified by troops and climate.

The next affair that engaged the attention of this restless Prince, was with a few Thibetian tribes, who occupied a valley in the province of Sze-chuen. These people, who lived in stone forts, and were very courageous, originally drew upon themselves the notice of the Chinese, by feuds that had grown up among them upon the point of supremacy. The Chinese interfered and were beaten. This led the Thibetians to estimate their own powers rather too highly, and they presumed, from time to time, to make incursions into the Celestial Empire. Këen-lung gladly seized upon the excuse for attacking them, and sending a favourite general amongst them, at the head of a large army, he speedily succeeded in reducing them. As usual, the Chiefs were all put to death.

The cruelties of Këen-lung produced considerable discontent amongst the Chinese, and a rebellion broke out, headed by a priest, and a Shan-tung man; but it was soon extinguished. The priest was put to death, and his accomplice hung himself in his own house. Another rebellion, which had a similar conclusion, was concerted by the Pih-lëen-keaou, or "Sect of the Water-lily," which has since become a very numerous community in China. They fought with great ferocity, until they were overcome by superior numbers. The Chief and his two wives, the one bearing a white, and the

other a black banner, fought side by side, and fell together on the field of battle. Insurrection, however, did not terminate here. The Mohammedans, who had suffered much injustice, through the extortionate conduct of the Mandarins, rose *en masse*, in the neighbourhood of Kan-suh, and ravaged the adjoining provinces. The rebels were destroyed without much difficulty, and Kēen-lung, on ascertaining that the cause of the revolt lay in the oppressions of the Mandarins, sentenced the Viceroy to death. His Imperial Majesty relented of this sentence; and, instead of putting the real offender to death, satisfied his sense of justice by substituting a former Viceroy of Canton, who had nothing to do with the matter, in his stead.

A quarrel, amongst the Mohammedans, inhabiting that part of Bukharia which had been annexed to Kan-suh, gave occasion for further warlike measures. The Mohammedans were divided into two sects, designated Red and White Caps, from the colour of their turbans. The White Caps accused the antagonist sect of having departed from the strict laws of the Koran, and carried their feud so far that the Governor banished 10,000 of them. They departed breathing vengeance, and, obtaining succour from their brethren in Tan-goot, raised an army of 100,000 strong, with which they prepared to invade China. On their way, the Mohammedan leader was intercepted and made prisoner. This event, however, did not discourage them. They advanced into

Kan-suh, and massacred all the Chinese they encountered. When they arrived at the capital, they learned that a powerful Chinese army was marching against them; and, satisfied with the success they had already obtained, they returned home to their remote retreats, carrying with them a large booty, which they had secured in the expedition. A-kwei, the Chinese General, followed them to their strongholds, and taking up his position on the opposite bank of the river, he employed himself in cutting off their supplies of water. Thus circumstanced, the Mohammedans resolved to put their families to death, for the purpose of reducing the demands upon their remaining stock, and then to cut their way through the ranks of the enemy. A-kwei, wearied with wasting their resources by detail, at length appeared before the fortress; and, as they refused to submit, took it by storm, and killed all the inhabitants, except a few of the Chiefs, whom he sent to Peking, that his Imperial Majesty might have the pleasure of seeing them killed himself. Këen-lung resolved to take a complete revenge, and ordered that all the Mohammedans, above the age of fifteen, should be killed in the province of Kan-suh. This order was punctually executed, and the treason and the traitors exterminated.

Shortly after this, Cochin-China, Tun-kin, and An-nam, asserted their independence, and it was not thought prudent to adopt any measures to re-

call them to subjugation. An attempt to secure their freedom was also made by the people of Formosa, and it was only at a considerable cost, in the way of bribery, that it was finally quelled. This was in 1788.

During the absence of one of the Chiefs of Thibet, the Nepaulese, allured by rapine, scoured that country, and carried o ffcertain golden vessels and ornaments, belonging to the places of worship. The Emperor was entreated to interfere, and he sent 70,000 men to chastise the Gorkhas. The result was, that, after penetrating into Nepaul, to within sixty miles of the British frontier, he reduced the Gorkhas to subjection, and rendered Thibet more subservient to him than ever.

Këen-lung had now reigned sixty years, and wearied with a scene of incessant turmoil, he resigned the throne at the age of eighty-five to his fifth son; but not until he had the pleasure of receiving at his court Ambassadors from England* and Holland. His character was not impressive, it fluctuated with circumstances. He was a patron of learning, but he had not a steady passion for it; and although he was occasionally kind to his subjects, his many cruelties obliterated the memory of his incidental virtues.

Kea-king, his successor, A. D. 1796, inherited all his vices, and possessed others of his own. He was a complete sensualist, and was destitute of all capacity

* Lord Macartney was the minister on that occasion.

for business. His mixed imbecility and cruelty provoked a conspiracy, but it was discovered and prevented, and the chief leader put to death, together with his younger son, who was strangled as an act of mercy. The suppression of the meditated rebellion seemed only to increase the vices of the Emperor, who now surrendered himself to the most effeminate habits. But he was awakened from his supine indulgences by the depredations of the daring pirates, who, with a formidable squadron, under the eyes of the Mandarins, cruised along the coasts of Cochin-China, Canton, and Formosa, taking the government junks wherever they met with them. At length an Imperial fleet was fitted out against them, and seeing themselves opposed by a superior force, they offered to surrender. This proposal was accepted, both fleets weighed anchor to enter into the proposed arrangement, and the pirates, having thrown the Imperial squadron off their guard, took advantage of the opportunity, and made their escape. Their adroitness in evading the vigilance of the Government, served to make them more bold in their exploits; and they proceeded so far with impunity as to levy a tax upon all merchant-vessels trading with the port. They had regular plans of operation, permanent agents at Canton, and Amuy merchants, who fitted out their vessels, and supplied them with the muniments of war. Some of the accounts estimate their strength at

70,000, navigating 800 large, and 1000 small vessels. They separated into six squadrons, each distinguished by a different coloured flag. Their commander imitated the chivalry of the old pirates, and when he was drowned, his wife assumed the authority, and appointed a poor fisher-boy her lieutenant. When the Government sent a squadron of forty Imperial junks against these sovereigns of the water, they were glad to save twelve of their number from the destruction that fell upon the remainder. Shortly after, a squadron of fifteen junks was sent against them, and shared the same fate. Another fleet followed, and when the Mandarin in command saw the great number of his enemy's vessels he attempted to escape, but they pursued him, jumped into the sea, and boarded six of his junks. The pirates were not always, however, triumphant. On one occasion a fleet of 100 sail attacked them, and set them on fire, when two hundred of their number were made prisoners, and several junks were taken. They redeemed themselves from this disgrace in the two next engagements, under command of the widow already mentioned, when they swept the Imperial squadron twice from the ocean. The Chinese authorities finding that they could not subdue these fierce rebels by warlike means, had recourse at last to preventive measures. They cut off all supplies, detained all vessels in the harbour, and allowed no external communication. This movement had no other effect than

that of forcing the pirates up the rivers, and inducing them to commit fresh depredations along the banks. In these circumstances it became necessary to try still farther measures, and accordingly, the Government engaged the Portuguese at Macao to assist them with several well-manned vessels: but with no better fortune. The whole armament was defeated, and driven off by the Ladrones. It is difficult to conjecture how long this state of things might have lasted, if dissensions among the pirates had not led one of their chiefs to offer his services to Government. The Emperor availed himself of the proposal, received the repentant rebel with his attendant force of 8000 men, and made him a naval Mandarin. The desertion of this chief led to an act of submission on the part of the heroic woman who had so long guided the rebellious junks. She sailed up towards the Bocca Tigris, and the Governor of Canton met her with a view to conclude the stipulated peace; but the appearance of some war junks at a distance, induced her to suspect that treachery was intended, and she hoisted sail and put out to sea. At length, however, she was re-assured of the sincerity of the Government, and a treaty was finally drawn up, by which the buccaneers obtained all that they required, and the Government relieved itself from one of the most dangerous of its enemies.

But the throne was still exposed to perils from within. A band of robbers who roved in the wilds

of Pi-chi-le conceived the extravagant idea of attacking the Imperial palace. The plan was well laid, but the vigilance of the troops overthrew the daring insurrectionists. The chief movers in the plot were sentenced to a slow and torturing death.

In 1817, a drought afflicted China, and according to the ancient superstition, Kea-king sought to avert it by prayers and sacrifices. It does not appear, however, that his pious fraud succeeded. On the 2nd of September, 1820, he died, after a reign, remarkable only for the numerous rebellions to which it gave rise.

Taou-kwang succeeded, and as his reign brings us to the present day, it does not require any particular observation. It is certain that China has improved under his rule, that the increase of commerce with England, although it is pursued under very disheartening circumstances, have yielded great benefit to the empire, and that the internal state of the country exhibits more tranquillity than it did in any former reign. Some disturbances have broken out in the distant districts, amongst the Mohammedans in Turkestan, the people of Formosa, and the Mëaou-tsze. These revolutions, however, have given way before the consolidated strength of the throne; and, while it must be confessed that China is but little improved in knowledge, morality, or that sort of wisdom which is derived from experience; it must at the same time be admitted that the extension of our

rule in India, the growing example of other states reaching China upon her borders, and the labours of the Missionaries, have contributed to soften the rigours of her governors, and to render them in some measure less barbarous than they were. They are still arrogant and vain-glorious, but they know that they durst not be so sanguinary, at least in their proceedings with other nations.

CHAP. XI.

Departure from Macao—Passage through the Straits of Banca and Sunda—Malay Pirates—The Ship Guilford—Enter the Indian Ocean—Description of the Cocoas or Keeling's Islands—Ennui on Ship-board—Swan River an Estuary—Conflicting opinions of the capabilities of the Settlement—Arrival at Van Diemen's Land.

HAVING now closed my remarks on the subject of China, its manners, institutions, and history, I will resume my diary. But before I take my final leave of the Celestial Empire, I desire to acknowledge the obligation I owe to the Canton Register, an English Journal commenced in 1827, and the Chinese Repository, established at a later date. Both these works are written by gentlemen who are practically acquainted with China, and they may be safely consulted upon all points of interest and importance, in reference to our relations with that country. I have the pleasure of being able to add, that a Magazine, in the Chinese language, for the sole use of the people, has been recently established by Europeans. This work is likely to prove a great benefit, in the dissemination of sound philosophical opinions, and general information. Mr. Gutzlaff also, has contributed largely to our stock of Eastern knowledge, by his valuable researches in Chinese history, his translations of many Chinese works, &c. &c.

Monday, December 20, 1830.—At day-break we left our anchorage in Macao Roads, and made all sail to proceed on our voyage, with a strong N.E. trade.

> "The gallant vessel goes before the wind!
> Her parting sails swell stately to the morn,
> She leaves the green earth, and its hills behind."

Having satisfied my curiosity in the only portion of this immense Empire which foreigners are allowed to visit, I bade it adieu without regret, being eager to escape from the meshes of chicanery and immorality with which the vicinity of Canton abounds. In the midst of native depravity, however, it was with peculiar pleasure that I found a small circle of my countrymen residing here, equally respectable and social, so much so, that my temporary residence among them was rendered extremely interesting and delightful. The over-reaching and insulting conduct of the Chinese tends to produce that instinctive union, on the part of the Foreign residents, which is absolutely necessary to repel oppressive treatment, or secure the slightest civility from the inhabitants. But little firmness is requisite, however, to put down their unjust enactions, or to oppose the measures they so frequently use by way of intimidation. The government authorities affect, upon all occasions, to treat the Foreign trade with contempt, though its beneficial results are sufficiently palpable from the large proportion of the revenue which is derived from Canton, and also

the facility of its collection: thousands of the labouring classes pour into this city annually from the neighbouring provinces, and find a ready subsistence for themselves and families through the various channels of that intercourse they pretend to despise. When our trade was stopped at the end of 1829, the people became so clamorous for its renewal, that the local government were obliged to accede to their wishes. And again, still more recently, I mean when the angry correspondence was going on, relating to Lord Napier's arrival in Canton without the Hoppo's pass; among the many edicts that were issued by the Governor, there was one forbidding all outside merchants from trading with Foreigners. This prohibition affected the interest of so many persons, that a great mob assembled at the Governor's gate to petition for the removal of the grievance, which request was speedily complied with. Indeed, the baleful consequences which must arise from the sudden stoppage of a long continued intercourse must be generally apparent. The collection of taxes is one of the most frequent causes of disturbance in the Celestial Empire; and, in consequence of the inability of the people to meet the demands of the Government, it is very commonly productive of fatal results: it is, therefore, evident that any temporary suspension of business must, under such circumstances, be regarded with universal dissatisfaction.

Eight days elapsed from the time of our departure from Macao, to our making the land of Sumatra, and on the following evening we anchored within view of the Monopin Hill.

Wednesday, 29.—At noon, lat. 2°. 10′. S. we were again obliged to anchor towards evening, from the breeze entirely deserting us. I found the increasing heat of the weather produce the most beneficial results, in ridding me of the rheumatism, from which I had suffered so much. I could now only complain of debility, from which I was in hopes of recovering quickly.

Thursday, 30.—We this morning entered the Straits of Banca, and in the course of the forenoon we passed two Dutch ships. At 1, P.M. the water became exceedingly shallow, there being only 15 feet, while the ship drew 14. A boat was consequently despatched with the chief mate, to sound, between the vessel and the Sumatra shore. At 4 o'clock, having passed the shoal, the boat returned on board, those who were in her having experienced a considerable broiling from the powerful rays of the sun. At 8 in the evening, Lucepera Island bore N.E. by N.

Tuesday, *Jan.* 4, 1831.—Since the 30th December, on which day we cleared the Straits of Banca, we have made but little progress, in consequence of the variable state of the weather, the wind and currents being generally against us; we usually anchored at night near one of the numerous islands

which surrounded us, and kept under weigh during the day. We were at one time but fifty miles from Batavia, and I fondly hoped that the currents would drive us into that harbour, which, however, the Captain succeeded in avoiding, not being so anxious as myself to enter a port he was not bound for, and thereby subject himself, not only to the port charges, but to a delay not absolutely necessary. Commanders of men-of-war, who are not tied down by such considerations, are generally eager to avail themselves of such opportunities, by which they not only contribute to the amusement, or satisfy the curiosity of those who are under their command, but materially benefit their health, by a supply of fresh provisions, fruit, and vegetables.

We had anchored on the previous day under the lee of North Island, which we left this morning to pursue our passage through the Straits of Sunda, but the wind increased to so formidable a height, that we gladly returned to the same spot for shelter. We approached the land more closely, and the Captain, accompanied by the second officer and part of the crew, went on shore to procure wood and water from the main land of Sumatra. The Captain found the ground exceedingly marshy; and abounding with snipes, of which he shot a few. On his return, he went on board a schooner, under Dutch colours, that had just anchored. She was

laden with rice, and was on her passage from Batavia to Bencoolen. Her commander was an Englishman, and he had a countryman on board as a passenger. Captain Parkyns invited them on board, and we spent a very pleasant evening together. They favoured us with a few Singapore and Calcutta papers, and from them we had the first intimation of the French revolution; the intelligence of which had reached Batavia only a few days before, by a ship from Amsterdam.

Wednesday, January 5.—As we remained at anchor, the crew continued to be employed in procuring wood and water. On a post near the watering place, it was found recorded, that Mr. Fullerton, late Governor of Penang, had been there recently, in the Governor-General's yacht, to wait the arrival of one of the H. C. ships from China, in which he had previously engaged his passage for England. We were visited throughout the day by the Malays, who came in their canoes, bringing with them monkeys, parrots, land tortoises, poultry, eggs, fruit, and vegetables for sale. The Dutch schooner, Allen, left us this morning.

Thursday, 6.—The task of wooding and watering being finished, we departed from North Island soon after daylight this morning. There was a moderate breeze, which still blew against us, and freshening as the day advanced, the sea got up considerably. At noon we were in lat. 5.° 50.′ s.

Spoke the ship Manlius, Captain Johnson, bound from Singapore to England; and in company with her, we bore away to return to our former anchorage. Captain Parkyns went on board the Manlius, after dinner, to gain intelligence, but there was nothing of importance to communicate, Captain Johnson informed him that he had sailed from England with convicts for Van Diemen's Land, under the charge of a superintendent surgeon, Dr. Johnson, R. N., who was still on board as a passenger. Having discharged her convicts at Hobart Town, she proceeded thence to Soorabaya, Samarang, and Singapore, and obtained at the last place her freight for England.

Friday, 7.—At day-break, we got under weigh, and continued beating to windward until 5, P. M. The wind and tide were both so strong against us, that we despaired of getting round Hogg Point before dark, so as to enable us to reach Rajah-Bassa Roads that evening. We therefore bore away, in company with the Dutch schooner, Allen, for Zoophen Island, under the lee of which we came to an anchor, and received another visit from Captain Biggs and his passenger.

Saturday, 8.—We made sail, as usual, at day-light, and succeeded in reaching another anchorage under the Sabooco Island, two miles from Rajah-Bassa Roads: Puolo-Bassa, bearing s. w. $\frac{1}{4}$ s., and the Peak of Crocatoa s. by w. $\frac{3}{4}$ w. We saw the Manlius again to-day, and a strange ship, sup-

posed to be the Guildford, bound from Singapore to England.

Sunday, 9.—A boat came off to-day from the Dutch residents at Puolo-Bassa, under the charge of two black men, one of them a 'mongrel' Portuguese, and the other a 'mongrel' Dutchman. They brought with them a variety of provisions, of very untempting appearance and quality, such as half-starved ducks and fowls, rotten eggs, and an inferior kind of orange. We did not wait, however, to come to terms for these precious articles, but got under weigh, and they were afraid to follow us, in consequence, as they informed us, of the presence of two small pirate vessels at no great distance. In the afternoon, we anchored, with the Manlius, under Crocatoa Island. We learnt from the Captain, and Dr. Johnson, that they had been on shore, and saw two small prows at anchor between Crocatoa and Long Islands. From their suspicious appearance, being well manned and armed, we had no doubt of their being the pirates of which we had received a description in the morning. We accordingly kept a good look-out, to give them a proper reception in case of an attack during the night. It is at all times necessary, however, to be prepared for such a rencounter among these islands, as the practice of piracy is very general; almost every Malay vessel being accustomed to act as a pirate, whenever they meet with any merchant-vessel, which they think they can overpower. On such occasions

they murder all on board without remorse, run the vessel on shore, plunder and burn her.

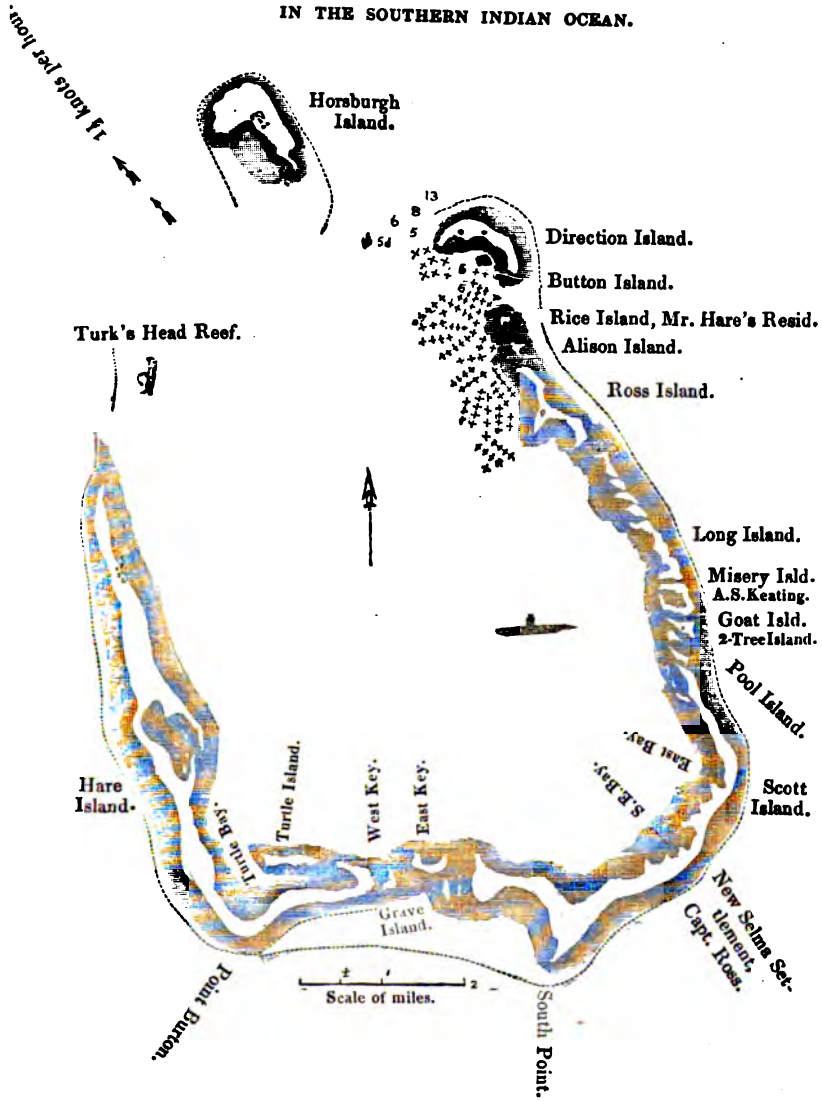
Monday, 10.—At daylight we left our anchorage in company with the Manlius; and, soon after our departure, got sight of the ship we had seen on Saturday, which proved to be the Guildford. At sunset we were under the lee of Prince's Island. The night was squally and rainy.

Tuesday, 11.—Shortly after noon we entered the strait between Java and Prince's Islands. It was very pleasant sailing through the channel, though it was rather tantalizing to be within so short a distance of the beautiful island of Java, without being able to make it a visit. Here we lost sight of the Guildford, to hear of her no more, as it was her melancholy fate never to reach England; she is supposed to have foundered in one of those terrific hurricanes so frequent in these seas, having been last seen on her course, between Java and the Mauritius. We arrived in about two hours at the further extremity of the strait, and soon found ourselves abreast of a very dangerous reef, called the Carpenter Rocks, lying off the s. w. point of Prince's Island. On passing beyond the shelter of this island, we were subjected to the increased strength of the wind and a heavy swell; the former, however, being in our favour, we shaped our course to pass round Java-head, which was accomplished before dark, and thus fairly launched into the great Indian Ocean. We had now before us the dull and

tedious monotony of a long voyage, which presented rather a gloomy prospect to our minds, after the varied beauties of the numberless islands with which these straits are studded. A friend having favoured me with a detailed account of an interesting group called the Cocoas or Keeling's Islands, I will lay it before the reader, as a means of beguiling the tediousness of the voyage. The following private note will appropriately introduce the subject.

"This group of islands is situated in the Southern Indian Ocean, nearly 600 miles to the s. w. of Java-head, and about 90 miles further, bearing west, from the nearest point of New Holland. They were first inhabited in 1825, by Capt. Le Cour, of the brig Mauritius, the fact having been recorded on the cocoa-nut trees, on which the names of himself, crew, and vessel are cut. Capt. John Ross, who commanded the Borneo, built by himself at the island of Borneo, with the assistance of the natives, formed a settlement here, consisting of Malays, Chinese, and English, to the number of thirty. His example was followed in 1827, by Mr. Alexander Hare, late British Resident of Borneo and its dependencies, who arrived in the Hippomines, with 130 Malays, men, women, and children. On Captain R.'s arrival, he found the remains of the huts which had been occupied by the crew of the brig Mauritius, and also several pits which they had dug for water. Some characters, apparently Arabic, were discovered cut on the trees.

A CHART OF THE
COCOAS OR KEELING'S ISLANDS,
IN THE SOUTHERN INDIAN OCEAN.



"It would be, perhaps, both useless and tedious to detail the plans that induced me and others to submit to voluntary banishment on these islands. I shall, therefore, pass it over, and inform you, that having, during my residence on them, borne up against privations of all sorts, I got away by a vessel going to Penang, in November, 1829; the following observations are the result of my twelve months' residence in different parts of the group, and they are at your service, to make whatever use of them you may think proper.

"I remain, my dear Sir,
Your's sincerely,
ARTHUR SAUNDERS KEATING."

The isles, great and small, are about thirty in number. By repeated observations, taken at the anchorage, Button Island bearing nearly E. and the body of Horsburg Island N. W., we found the lat. to be 12°. 14′. S. and long. 97°. 0′. E. Their length is about twelve miles, and their breadth eight and a half. The channels which run between them are formed by the surf which forces a body of water between the coral reefs. A vessel, on entering the bay, should keep well over towards Direction Island, with which she must sail parallel in eight fathoms, until she rounds the point; the water inside decreases to six and five and a half fathoms. Here a complete shelter is afforded from the prevailing S. E. trade, the wind never coming to the N. of E. The narrowness of the entrance renders

these islands easy of defence. Vessels may lay snugly moored in the basin of Direction Island, undiscovered by ships at sea. The safety of the anchorage, and the salubrity of these islands, point them out as an excellent place for refitting, or rendezvous for shipping, in time of war; the facility of obtaining refreshments after a long cruise, being a still further inducement.

The rocks are black coral which are easily seen and avoided, as the bottom is composed of fine white sand. In the passage between Turk's-head Reef, and Horsburg Island, there is a channel wide enough to admit a ship of moderate draught, but it is rendered dangerous by the number of straggling rocks, and a strong current setting N. N. W. at the rate of a mile and a half an hour.

The average elevation of these islands at high water is not more than two feet, but they are easily discernible from the deck of an East Indiaman at a distance of six leagues, in consequence of the number of cocoa-nut trees, which sometimes reach the height of seventy or eighty feet. The rise of tide in the bay is about four feet and a half, and it is high water at full and change of the moon, at half past four, P. M. These islands are entirely of coral formation, and would seem to arise from the summit of a submarine volcano, the basin having in a great degree, the appearance of a crater. A wall of coral surrounds the group, except at the entrances already described; the surf constantly breaks over

this wall with ceaseless fury, so that a landing is effectually prevented, save through the bay of Direction Island. No bottom can be found outside the breakers, while inside the bay the average depth is 5½ fathoms. In the southern part of this bay the coral has risen to such a height as to leave some portions of it quite dry at low water.

Large quantities of pumice-stone have been found on all the islands. This, it is probable, may have been washed hither from the volcanoes in the Java sea, as seeds and plants from Sumatra and Java have been driven up by the surf on the windward side of the islands. Among them have been found the Kimiri, native of Sumatra and the peninsula of Malacca; the Cocoa-nut of Balci, known by its shape and size; the Dadass, which is planted by the Malays with the pepper vine, the latter entwining round its trunk, and supporting itself by the prickles on its stem; the soap tree; the castor-oil plant; trunks of the sago palm; and various kinds of seeds unknown to the Malays who settled on the islands. These are all supposed to have been driven on shore by the N. W. monsoon to the coast of New Holland, and thence to these Islands by the S. E. trade wind. Large masses of Java teak, and yellow wood, have also been found, besides immense trees, of red and white cedar, and the blue gum-wood of New Holland, in a perfectly sound condition. All the hardy seeds, such as creepers, retain their germinating power, but the

softer kinds, among which is the mangostin, are destroyed in the passage. Fishing canoes, apparently from Java, have at times been washed ashore, and in 1826-7 the Sir Francis Nicholas, Burton, a large brig, from London to Calcutta, was totally wrecked on the s. w. point of Hare Island, and part of the crew drowned. They were some degrees out in their longitude, and the night on which the wreck took place was dark and stormy.

Turtle may be procured in great quantities; they come up with the rising tide to the southern side of the bay, to feed on the turtle-grass that covers the shallows; and return with the tide to the deep pits in the coral reefs which they make their abodes. These pits vary in size, from ten yards to half a mile across, but the depth is similar to that of the anchorage. Their sides are quite precipitous, but in a few years the coral will, no doubt, fill them up to high water mark.

Fish may also be taken, either by hook or net, in great quantities. Misery, and Goat Islands, are the best places for hauling the seine, and the fish caught there cure well. From 1700 to 1800 have been taken at one haul. Among the rest is an immense dark green fish with a large head, and a profile like that of an ox. Some of them have been taken two-hundred weight each; there are also the barracouta, the garoupa, the snapper, rock cod, and other rock fish, that devour the shell-fish, and feed at low water on the tender shoots of the

young coral. Sharks are numerous, but known to be perfectly harmless, which is accounted for by the number of smaller fish that yield them a constant supply of food, and deprive them of the necessity of indulging in their ravenous propensities. The devil-fish, or sea-devil, a gigantic species of ray, is a much more formidable antagonist, and renders bathing exceedingly dangerous, unless near the shore. They are seen playing about in shoals for two or three days together. Flying-fish are very numerous outside the islands, but never venture into shoal water. There are numberless other species, many of which have never been mentioned in any work on Ichthyology; they are seen in greater numbers, when the wind is easterly, than when it is southerly. Shell-fish are also exceedingly plentiful; the Chama Gigax has been taken three feet across the shell; large cray-fish are to be had in the months of January and August, but not at any other period; sea-crabs, of various sizes, may be met with; some of them, however, are not fit for food, the blue crab especially, which grows to an enormous size, being poisonous, the only thing about, or on the islands that is so.

Land-crabs are very numerous; they make their habitations near the roots of decayed trees, where they are taken, by carrying a torch at night; they are also captured soon after dark, when they crawl down to the salt water, and remain, washing or drinking, for about a quarter of an hour. Their prin-

cipal food is the cocoa-nuts that fall from the trees. Under their tail is a large bag of yellow fat, which is dissolved by a slight heat into a pure animal oil; this is their support in the month of July, when they retire to their holes to cast their shells. On their re-appearance they look wretchedly lean, the provision bag being quite empty.* The hermit-crabs infest the islands in such swarms, that they are quite a nuisance.

Immense numbers of marine and other birds frequent the Cocoas; some of them will allow themselves to be approached, and even contest the spot which they happen to occupy. Gannets† and loobies are to be seen in great numbers; they invariably leave the islands in the morning; and, having proceeded a great way to windward, return in the evening, scarcely able to fly, in consequence of the quantity of flying-fish and squids which they have swallowed in their course. They have been found as far as seventy miles to windward, but never to leeward, except perhaps a solitary bird. Ships may, consequently, take the appearance of these birds as a sure guide for the position of the islands. About an hour before sunset, the frigate

* This is somewhat similar, in the use to which it is converted, to the hump of the Camel, by which the animal is sustained in the absence of its ordinary food.

† One species of the Gannet builds its nest in the bush; while the other, a larger, whiter, and handsomer bird, makes a hole in the sand for its abode.

bird is observed floating steadily in the air at a great height, ready to pounce upon these birds as they return; he pursues and striking them on the head and back with his hard crooked bill, causes them to disgorge the contents of their stomach, which he darts after and catches as they fall. Pigeons and Java sparrows are found here that have flown away from ships in the bay. Most of the domestic fowl have also left the Settlement, and become wild in the jungle. Ducks and fowls thrive well here in the domestic state. A bird of the Rail kind, called Ralus Crex, lays only two eggs, whereas all other species of crakes lay about twelve or fourteen. Red, blue, and white cranes are very numerous. Snipes and sand pipers are very few and shy.

Pigs do well and multiply fast; some have run wild on Hare Island, and are now grown large and formidable. The house-lizard and sand-flies are very numerous; but musquitoes are seldom met with. There are two species of water-snakes, which are generally from four to five feet long, and from six to nine inches in circumference. The colour of one is silver grey, and of the other, which is the larger one, a reddish grey. They live on the small crabs, which abound especially on the beach. Their bite is very severe, and they are consequently much dreaded in shallow water among the coral reefs.

Almost all the islands are crowded with cocoa-nut trees, around which an impervious jungle has,

in many places, been produced by the nuts that have fallen. This is of serious injury to the old trees, by depriving their roots of the necessary sun and air, whereas the young trees that spring up, choak each other by their proximity, and are seldom productive. On the inside of the bay, a tree is found, close to the salt water, which runs like a creeper, and twines itself into the most fantastic shapes, seeming at times like an immense snake. It was called iron-wood from its exceeding hardness. There is a tree resembling the Protea species; its wood is very soft, with a fleshy silver leaf. Another, that is somewhat similar to the Norway Pine, grows about thirty feet in height, and has a leaf shaped like a heart. There is a small tree precisely like the box in appearance, that will only grow near the sea. The Pandanus is common, and reaches an immense height. The natives of Java make their sleeping mats from this tree; and hats have also been made from it, that are considered superior to those formed from the cocoa-nut leaf. Pumpkins, turnips, Indian corn, and tobacco have been successfully introduced and cultivated in these islands. Sugar canes and plantains were rather sickly, and the greatest care is requisite in preserving every thing that is planted, in consequence of the numbers of locusts which devour all before them.

Water is obtained by digging pits to the level of the sea; if they be dug deeper, the water becomes brackish. It ebbs and flows with the sea, leaving

in most of the pits only a few inches of fresh water. During the summer months, from November to April, while the N.W. monsoon blows in the Java sea, there is but little rain; in the other six months, however, it falls both constantly and heavily. About a quarter of a mile from the north point of Hare Island, two large wells have been sunk in the rock near the beach. In Horsburg Island water may be procured, but landing there is attended with considerable danger; and boating in any part of the bay is dangerous after dark. There is a good sized well in Albion Island, but the best is at New Selma, or Scott Island, the residence of Captain Ross. The climate of the Cocoas is remarkably healthy; the general range of the thermometer during the twenty-four hours is only 10 degrees, from 78° to 88°. It sometimes rises to 90°, but the heat is greatly moderated by the constant breeze.

An island, called the North Keeling, lies about fourteen miles to the northward of the Cocoa group. It is very low, and at high water the tide flows over its centre, so as to give it the appearance of a basin, surrounded by a narrow slip of land, save at a small gap, on the N.E. side. Like the Cocoas, it is of coral formation, and abounds with cocoa trees. It is only visited by sea birds and turtle. The surf breaks so completely round it, that a landing is effectually prevented, except at the N.W. point; and even there it is a matter of great difficulty. The channel between it and the Cocoas is considered safe, being

mostly unfathomable, though patches of coral are said to have been seen about midway.

From another very interesting account of the *Cocoas*, with which I have been favoured by my friend Captain Mangles, R.N., the following additional particulars are extracted.

" The soil of these islands is formed entirely by the detrition of coral. On the sea front, you may walk out, at low water, to the edge of the reef, by which they are nearly encircled, and look down out of soundings, so perseveringly have the insect architects performed their labours towards the light, and raised their little dwellings one above another. Labouring incessantly in the construction of their cells, they often unwittingly insure their own ruin, for no sooner have they raised their works above high water-mark, than the structures they intended for their dwellings become their tombs.

" All the islands, save in two instances, are connected by causeways, which may be forded at low water. Of the two exceptions; one is the entrance to the harbour, which is narrow and intricate; but after a vessel is once in, the water is as smooth as a mill-pond, and she is well sheltered from all the prevailing winds; so that when we dropped our anchor in this lovely haven, I was immediately reminded of the passage in the ' Tempest'—

Safely in harbour
Is the King's ship—in the deep nook she's hid.

" Nearly the whole of the islands are covered with

cocoa-nut trees, which are so matted together with the jungle and young trees, as to be almost impenetrable, and the fruit is scattered over the ground in prodigious quantities. One tree has been known to yield upwards of a hundred nuts in a season. These islands, being clothed with verdure to their summits, diversify and enrich, not only the beauty of the fore-ground, but also the outline of the landscape. The climate is delicious; the atmosphere clear in the extreme; and the sky of so exquisite a blue, that it would lend reality to one of Albano's most vivid pictures, or fully merit the description in Don Juan:

> "Oh darkly! deeply! beautifully blue,
> As some one, somewhere, sings about the sky."

And then the graceful waving of the elegant palm; the snow-white beach, which is beautifully contrasted with the verdant back-ground the trees afford; the foaming of the breakers, which curl up in terrific grandeur between the islands, as if they envied the repose of the retired nook, or the quiet sheltered bay, where the bleached sand is studded with beautiful shells,—

> "And all was stillness, save the sea-birds' cry,
> And dolphins' leap, and little billow crossed
> By some low rock, or shelve, that made it fret
> Against the boundary it scarcely wet."

Nor does the sea fail to contribute to the beauty of the scene; of a transparent emerald green, without

a shade of turbid water, its waves pure and limpid, both within and without the basin—it is occasionally diversified with every tint of blue and green, blended, at times, with white and yellow, so as to form a rare combination of variety and beauty. In the absence of cliffs, the sea birds contrive, notwithstanding their web feet, to perch upon the trees, in the branches of which they may be seen, at sunset, roosting by thousands. One beautiful species, with black head, red bill and feet, and snow-white wings, which are long and shaped like those of the swallow, lays its eggs in a concavity of the palm leaf, and actually hatches them in this position, in spite of the awkward undulation, occasioned by the winds; forcibly reminding me that 'necessity is indeed the mother of invention.'

"Turtle, that come to feed on the long grass which grows in the shallow parts of the haven, are caught by the persevering chase of one individual, detached from a small flat raft, on which are three men, furnished with long poles: care is taken to keep in sight the first object of pursuit, and not to be led away by the appearance of others in his track; the unwieldy animal darts off at first with considerable rapidity, but is soon wearied, and, breathless by this unusual exertion, becomes an easy prey to his pursuer.

"The settlers, who have located on these islands with Mr. Hare, reside in huts, which they have built with the branches of the palm, each indi-

vidual having taken possession of as much freehold property as he pleased. They have each their respective farms, with the requisite poultry-yards, hen-houses, piggeries and gardens. We took away with us twenty dozen of ducks and fowls, without making any sensible diminution in their stock, the proprietors gladly accepting in exchange, biscuits, rice, and spirits. It appears that one shock of an earthquake has been felt by the present inhabitants, though it was, fortunately, neither long nor violent."

During the first fortnight after our departure from the Straits of Sunda, the wind continued, most obstinately, between the south and west points of the compass, which was, unhappily, the direction in which we wished to proceed. In this tedious period, the only variety we had was the difference in the strength of the breeze, and occasional calms. On the occurrence of the latter, we indulged in most sanguine hopes of a favourable change, a calm being invariably regarded by sailors as the precursor of a fair wind. This agreeable delusion was greatly increased by sundry appearances and signs in the sea, sky, and atmosphere, which served to cheer our spirits for the moment, though they were often damped again, as our hopes were disappointed by the return of the breeze to the old quarter. My fellow-passengers consisted of two invalids from India, who were unable, as may be presumed, to contribute much to my amusement or

gratification. I was, however, occasionally favoured with a little reading. When we met at table there was no lack of conversation, all of us having visited, in our time, various portions of the world; Captain Parkyns had served on the same station as myself for several years, and was consequently acquainted with many of my old friends and shipmates; so that, between long yarns and old Indian stories, we were never dull at meal-times, the assembling at which, is generally looked forward to with anxiety in a long sea-voyage, as being the most interesting portion of the day.

Tuesday, January 25.—This morning the wind drew gradually round from S. to S.E., occasioning no small rejoicing among us, convinced as we were, from the degree of latitude we had attained—nearly 20° S.—that we had at last got hold of the regular trade-wind, which is usually met with between the 12th and 15th degrees of south latitude.

Had Captain Parkyns engaged to take, as passengers, Sir James and Lady Home, to Swan River, it would have considerably increased the length of our voyage to Van Diemen's Land. We must have gone nearly as far to the southward and westward before we could get a wind, to enable us to run for the former, as it was necessary to do to get to the latter; and, in returning from Swan River, we should have been obliged to have taken the same circuitous route, as the quickest method of reaching Van Diemen's Land. Though I was desirous of visit-

ing Swan River, my curiosity was not sufficiently strong to induce me to go much out of my way, being rather damped by the various accounts I had met with since the establishment of the Colony. British industry, aided by a large supply of capital, may produce a favourable effect, still there are some natural obstacles which it would seem to be a matter of great difficulty to overcome. I have been informed by several experienced seamen, that Swan Port is never likely to be safe for shipping. Cockburn Sound is an excellent anchorage, if you can only get there. The best passage that has yet been found into it is very intricate, and at the season when the strong westerly winds prevail, it is exceedingly dangerous to approach the coast. To form a fair judgment, however, of the actual capability of this Colony, the readiest mode, perhaps, would be to take into consideration the respective opinions of those who entertain opposite views on the subject; as some persons affect to consider it a paradise, whilst others are inclined to describe it as a mere sandy desert.

I will here lay before the reader a description of the settlement, which was given me by a friend, who has recently paid it a visit; and who, not being interested either way, may be accepted as an impartial commentator.

"The appearance of the whole country is that of a continued forest: the trees, however, being so dispersed that you may ride on horseback in every

direction. The larger trees are not remarkable for beauty; they are mostly of the genus Eucalyptus, under which denomination the mahogany, and the red and blue gums are included. But the smaller trees, being principally Banksias, of which there are five varieties, are covered with blossoms of the most exquisite beauty. The flowering shrubs and plants are to be met with in all directions, and surpass, in richness of colouring and gracefulness of form, those of any other country I have ever visited. In the months of September and October, the surface of the ground is closely studded with flowers of numberless hues and tints, which almost persuade the spectator that he is walking through a cultivated garden. While the sense of seeing, however, is thus highly delighted, that of smell receives but little gratification, the flowers of this country, with only one or two exceptions, being entirely devoid of scent.

"The Swan River, as it is called, is, more properly speaking, an estuary; being salt, and quiescent at its very commencement: the bed of the river is filled with fresh water in the rainy season only, when the draining of the waters from the surrounding country brings down the freshes. The fresh water is no sooner discharged than the sea enters again, and usurps its place, as there is no source or spring to keep up the supply, and maintain a running stream, as is the case in all rivers. The level of the sea, at Gordon Island, and at the head

of the Swan River, is the same, though a distance of thirty-four miles intervenes between them, which may be stated as follows :—

	Miles.
From Cockburn Sound to Freemantle,	10
Freemantle to Perth, -	10
Perth to Guildford, - -	10
Guildford to the Head of the Swan River, - - - - -	4
	34

"There is no tide, but the level at Perth occasionally fluctuates, as the sea or land breeze prevails. Sharks and salt water fish are found at the very head of the stream. The tortuous windings of the estuary render it similar in appearance to a river, but the saltness of the water prevents that exuberant vegetation which graces, in general, the margin of fresh water rivers; in its place, however, are to be found trees, which, by feathering into the water, greatly increase the beauty of the scenery. Birds here are very numerous; there are two beautiful varieties of the black cockatoo, one with a red and the other with a white band across the tail, which are seldom, if ever, seen in Europe."

In lat. 24°½ s. when the temperature of the sea was 74°. F. and that of the air 76°. the coldness of the weather was a source of considerable annoyance to the Lascars and monkeys.

Tuesday, February 8.—Lat. 36°. s. and long. about 100°. E. The wind having sprung up from

the northward and eastward; we were enabled to direct our course to the place of our destination. From this day till the 26th, there was not any occurrence which deserved to be recorded; except that nearly the whole of the time we had strong blowing weather, the wind prevailing between N. W. and S. W.

Sunday, 27.—In the middle of the night we anchored near the entrance of the Derwent; and, about noon, when the sea-breeze set in, we proceeded up the river, and arrived off Hobart Town at a quarter past two. The distance of Hobart Town from the sea, is about twelve miles, either by land or water. The navigation of the Derwent is perhaps, as easy, and void of danger, as that of any river in the world; and I found a greater number of vessels at this port than could well have been expected, at one of the two trading ports of so young a Colony. There were three ships, two brigs, and a number of smaller vessels. We were visited by the Harbour-Master, Lieutenant Hill, R. N. and several strangers. My two fellow-passengers disembarked, to take up their quarters on shore, but, as I always like to gain as much local information as possible, before taking such a step, I resolved upon remaining quiet until the following day.

CHAP. XII.

Author disembarks at Hobart Town—Female Factory and Orphan School—"Solomon's Temple"—Convict Labour—Macquarie Harbour—Risden Farm—Recollections of the early Settlers—Natives and Europeans—Visit the Jail—First Races at Hobart Town—New Wharf—The Battery—Epidemic and its causes—Leave Hobart Town for the Interior—Saltpan Plains, the residence of Mr. Kermode—Ross Bridge—Campbell Town—Wanstead Park—Captain Wood's Farm—South Esk Ferry—Launceston—Mymosa Bark—Public Jail—Visit to George Town—Anecdote of Native Ferocity—Mr. Walsh, Port Captain—Cataract of the South Esk—Supply of Water—Mr. Lawrence—Departure from Launceston—Van Diemen's Land Horse-Company's Establishment—Pensanger—Improvident Speculations—A Yorkshire Farmer—Mona Vale—Return to Hobart Town—Author Embarks for Sydney.

Tuesday, March 1.—Captain Parkyns came on board to-day, accompanied by my old naval friend Mr. Hamilton. We soon raked up our recollections of the last five-and-twenty years, and followed up our reminiscences with such pertinacity, that we did not leave any one else an opportunity of throwing in a word. There is something delightfully exhilarating in the renewal of old friendships, arising, no doubt, in some degree, from the temporary delusion of the enjoyment of that youth which the retrospective view of past scenes presents to the imagination. It is singular enough that I brought

a letter of introduction to this my old friend from a gentleman in China, having no idea at the time, of the previous acquaintance which had existed between us; this is the second occasion, however, in which such a circumstance has occurred to me, in the course of my travels.

I went on shore in the afternoon, and engaged a servant and apartments at the Macquarie hotel;* having taken my leave of the Merope, and my esteemed friend Captain Parkyns, to whom I beg here to express the great obligations I owe, for his courtesy aud kindness.

Wednesday, 2. — I accompanied a lady this morning to visit the Female Factory, about two miles from Hobart Town. It is intended for the reception of such female "prisoners" as are not disposed of immediately on their arrival from England, as well as those who are returned from the service in which they had been placed, either in consequence of sickness or refractory conduct. In speaking of them, the word *prisoner* is invariably substituted for *convict* by all classes, both in New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land; the latter term being considered by them so exceedingly opprobrious, that its application is highly offensive, and never forgiven.

The Factory is capable of accommodating 300 women, and 60 children. All the women have their

* This hotel was kept by a respectable settler and his wife, who had failed in the farming business.

respective services to perform, and they are distinguished into three classes, the worst of whom are employed in picking wool, washing, and the drudgery of the establishment; the next in spinning; and the first class in ironing, making clothes for the household, and shirts for the male prisoners. At the time of my visit there were 220 women, and 62 children, many of whom were ready to be assigned, had there been a demand for them. The children are not permitted to remain with their mothers after they are weaned, but are placed under the care of nurses. When four years old they are sent to the Orphan School, at which they remain until they are apprenticed; but as there happened to be no vacancies in the school at that time, the two supernumerary children were obliged to wait for admission. They are instructed in reading, writing, and arithmetic; and the elder girls, in addition to needle-work, are employed in various domestic offices, to enable them to perform the duty of servants.

One day I visited the Barracks for the male prisoners. It is a large building, with accommodations for 800 persons, though there were at that time but half the number lodged within its walls. These were employed in carrying on the Government works in the town, some of them being engaged in extending their own building, the upper part of which was intended for a chapel, and the lower as a place of confinement for the refractory prisoners. There were also cells for solitary con-

finement, which was to be substituted for corporal punishment. There was a treadmill, which was first put into action on the 16th of February, 1828. Thirty-six persons, for minor offences, were occupied at it for different periods. The wheel was composed of thirty steps, and made its revolution in half a minute, being a second for every step. Eighteen men stood on the wheel at a time, and at each revolution a man came off, while another got on at the opposite end, so that each man was nine minutes on, and nine minutes off. When this mill was kept in full activity, it ground much more than was required for the consumption of the establishment. The prisoners were under the superintendence of Lieutenant Gunn, who had lost an arm through a musket-shot from Brady, the celebrated leader of a party of bush-rangers.

Saturday, 5.—The weather, which had hitherto been very warm, with the thermometer at 80°, became to-day exceedingly bleak and cold, the thermometer being as low as 55°, and the wind blowing from the southward. This wind is similar in its effects to an easterly wind in England. In a few days it changed to the N.W., and the weather became proportionably mild.

There are several respectable hotels in Hobart Town, but the Macquarie is said to be the best, or perhaps, I should say, the most fashionable. It is situated in the street of the same name, which is the widest and kept in the best order of any in the town.

This street is a mile in length, but the line of houses does not extend more than half that distance, beyond which it is merely a road, with, occasionally, detached houses at short intervals. The greatest extent of this road is not more than two miles from the town, as it does not lead to any of the settled parts of the interior. Many of the public buildings are situated in Macquarie Street, among which are the church, Government house, jail, and guard-room. Some of the best private dwellings are also to be found here. The largest private house in the town, however, is one at the bottom of Liverpool Street, at but a short remove from the water-side; it was sarcastically termed "Solomon's Temple," in consequence of its having belonged to two brothers of the Jewish persuasion (Judah and Joseph Solomon), who were prisoners under a ticket of leave. It was a large brick building of only one story, but covering a great extent of ground; the upper apartments were let out as lodgings, the lower portion being occupied as a shop and store-rooms. It is said to have been raised on a "*rum foundation*," as its owners amassed the greater part of their money by smuggling rum from the ships; and as they purchased it at five shillings a gallon, and sold it to the prisoners at a guinea a bottle, their ready acquisition of wealth is easily accounted for.

Macquarie Harbour is the station to which the worst description of prisoners are consigned, as the only chance of escape is by an overland journey,

so rugged and difficult, that few who have made the attempt have ever succeeded in effecting it. A party once set out together, and in their futile attempt to reach the settled parts of the island, only one survived to describe the miseries which they endured, and the horrid expedients to which they resorted to sustain their existence. In such dread is the servitude at Macquarie Harbour held by the prisoners who are banished thither from the settled parts of the island, that they not unfrequently murder their companions, for the desperate and gloomy satisfaction of returning to the capital, where they can pass a little time previous to their trial, and the ignominious death which they know awaits them. Their employment principally consists in felling timber, building vessels, and loading them with the timber they have cut. Some of these vessels are employed in conveying troops, prisoners, and provisions between that, or other stations, and Hobart Town. There was at this time a vessel of 300 tons, building here for some merchants, by way of experiment, for the whale fishery. The only free persons on the spot were the troops, and a few officers in charge of the stores and medical department, and there was not a single female in any way associated with the prisoners. The second class of prisoners under Colonial sentence, or troublesome characters just arrived from England, are despatched to Maria Island, near the coast, in the direction of Bass's Straits, where they are chiefly

employed in weaving coarse cloth, the yarn for which is sent from the Female Factory, to which place the cloth is returned to be made up for the unassigned male prisoners. It seems to me that if coarse cloth were obtained from England, and these prisoners employed in making roads, or other public works, it would be converting their labour to more useful purposes. A small number of them had been sent to Port Arthur, formerly called Stewart's Harbour, a short time previous to my arrival, and were employed there in cutting timber, and sawing it into planks.

There is a dangerous bar at the entrance to Macquarie Harbour, which causes the sea to break so heavily that it frequently sweeps the decks of vessels in passing it. I was informed by a pilot of the Derwent, who had been some time at the former place, that he was often obliged to have the man at the helm secured by ropes, while he and the crew ascended the rigging until they passed the bar, when the water became immediately smooth, and the anchorage very good.

Tuesday, 8.—I had the honour of dining to-day with his Excellency, the Lieutenant-Governor, who entertained a mixed party of official persons, visitors to the Island, and settlers; among the latter was Major Grey, the well known African traveller.

Wednesday, 9.—I left Hobart Town this morning, in company with Mr. Greigson, for his residence

at Risden.* We proceeded in his boat, from the Government Gardens, to the opposite side of the Derwent, and landed in a small bay at Lyndhurst Farm, from whence we walked about three miles and a half before we reached his abode at Risden Farm, which is rented by Mr. Greigson from the agent of Col. Geils. The dwelling-house stands about 200 yards from a tide creek that branches off from the Derwent, which river is about a quarter of a mile from the farm : at high water, small boats can come up abreast of the house. I am induced to be thus particular in my description of this place, as the first act of hostility, between the natives and a party of soldiers, who were encamped here in 1803, for the purpose of taking possession of the island, occurred on this spot. It is said to have originated in the following manner. A small stone-house had been erected for a gardener, and he was commencing the cultivation of the ground immediately around it. In the midst of his work one day, he was surprised by the appearance of some natives advancing towards him, and ran off much frightened to the camp to give the alarm. Lieut. Moore, who commanded a party of the 102nd, drew up his men to resist the expected attack; and on the approach of the natives, the soldiers were ordered to fire upon them. The exe-

* A corruption from Restdown, its original name, so called from it having been the first place in which a tent was pitched on taking possession of the colony.

cution which this volley did among them, and their ignorance of the nature of fire-arms, terrified them to such a degree, that they fled, without attempting the slightest defence. From this moment a deep-rooted hatred for the strangers sprang up among them, and all endeavours to subdue it have hitherto proved ineffectual. Revenge is one of the strongest passions in the breast of a savage, and he will seek its gratification, with a perseverance and determination which nothing can eradicate.

Lieut. Moore, with his party of the 102nd, and a few convict prisoners, landed at Risden on the 3rd of June, 1803, from the brig Lady Nelson, commanded by Lieut. Bowen, R.N., having left Port Jackson expressly for the purpose of taking possession, and holding a temporary command of the island, lest the French should anticipate us in that object. On the 16th of February, 1804, Colonel Collins arrived in H. M. S. Ocean, and took formal possession of the Colony, having found the small party that preceded him in a wretched state, from want of provisions. He established his head-quarters on the spot where Hobart Town has since been built.

The above-mentioned breach with the natives has been followed by frequent provocations, which fully justify that hostile feeling they entertain towards their European invaders. The cruelties, to which they have been subjected, have been chiefly inflicted, however, by the bush-rangers, and

convict-servants in charge of sheep and cattle at the out-stations; and who, being provided with fire-arms which rendered the resistance of the natives unavailing, were frequently guilty of the forcible abduction of the native women. To effect their object, the additional crime of murder was not of rare occurrence. As the weapons of the natives, made from the trees of the woods they inhabit, were of little use in comparison with the deadly weapons of their aggressors, they were naturally obliged to resort for their defence to the aid of stratagem and artifice. In treacherous conduct, however, it must be admitted, the bush-rangers were far surpassed by the convict-servants, who, among other cruelties, have been known to practise the following murderous trick upon the natives, when they have confidingly mixed with our people in the out-stations. They have produced a brace of pistols, one of which was loaded, and the other not; then taking the unloaded one, would apply it to their ear, and after pulling the trigger, would laugh most heartily, as if the act were attended with peculiar gratification. A simple native would be thus induced to make a similar experiment with the loaded pistol, the natural consequence of which was, that he would blow out his own brains!

The Island of Van Diemen's Land, or Tasmania, has been in our possession for a period of twenty-seven years, and yet there is but *one* British resident, who is enabled to hold communion with the

natives. The person thus distinguished is Mr. Robinson, who, having acquired their language, and gone amongst them for the purpose of effecting a reconciliation, has done much more, in my opinion, towards the suppression of their hostile feelings, than the introduction of penal measures could ever have accomplished.

The natives of Van Diemen's Land are supposed, in consequence of the great personal resemblance which they bear to the people of New Guinea, to have originally found their way hither from that island. They have flat noses, thick lips, hair exceedingly woolly, with other characteristics of the African race; and are generally agreed to be much inferior, in the scale of human beings, to the aborigines of New Holland, who, from their similarity of features and long black hair, are undoubtedly of Malay origin. Some persons have asserted that they are the lowest grade of the human race, being but little superior to the brute creation; however this may be, it is certain they are not cannibals, like the more *civilized*, and intelligent natives of New Zealand: they respect the remains of their deceased companions, either by burial, or by carefully depositing them in hollow trees; if they cannot find one which decay has fitted for their purpose, they, by the use of fire, procure a cavity sufficiently large for the occasion. Another instance of humane consideration among them is, that in the gratification of revenge for any injury they have received,

they generally spare the children of those whom they have destined to be their victims. They seem to have but little fear of death; and, from the observations which have been made upon them when confined in our prisons, it is supposed they would even prefer death, to a continuance under restraint. Bleeding by scarification is a mode of treatment in general use among them, in cases of sickness. Migration from one part of the island to another is usual with the respective tribes, according to the season of the year; the attainment of food appearing to be their principal object in the change of place. At one period they repair to the coast, and trust for their subsistence to their expertness in spearing the finny tribe, together with the supply of shell-fish which they procure from the rocks and beach; while at another time they seek their support among the wild animals of the forest. One of their modes of hunting the Kangaroo, is generally as successful as it is ingenious. Having discovered a spot to which they know a number of these animals resort, they make a fire round it, taking care to leave two or three openings by which they may endeavour to escape; they then station themselves at these places, and on the animals attempting to pass, they spear them with such dexterity, that few are ever permitted to escape. They use similar means when any of these animals are found on a small hill, by making a fire round its base. This practice, however, is rather neglected

of late, since they have become acquainted with the use of dogs, which they have procured from the settlers, and which they invariably treat with great kindness, from a consciousness of their value.

Thursday, March 10.—Colonel Logan left Hobart Town to-day, with a detachment of the 63rd regiment, to scour the country about New Norfolk, twenty-two miles distant from the capital, as some depredations had been committed lately, either by the bush-rangers, or the aborigines. I dined with my friend Major Fairtclough, at the 63rd mess, where there was but a small party, as many of the officers had accompanied the Colonel. We left the mess early, to spend the remainder of the evening at Mr. Bohan's, surgeon of the regiment, whose lady had accompanied him in the circumnavigation of the globe, and travelled over many portions of the four quarters.

Friday, 11.—This month corresponds with our September, and yet the hill behind Hobart Town, called Mount Wellington, is covered with snow. This, certainly, is not a proof of the mildness of the climate of this country; and as far as my experience goes, I think it exceedingly changeable. This morning was cold and cloudy, with frequent showers. Wind s.w.

I dined to-day with Mr. Burnett, the Colonial Secretary; there was a small party, among whom I had the pleasure of meeting my old friends, Major Douglas of the 63rd, and Mr. Hamilton, R.N.

Monday, 14.—I accompanied Mr. Kermode in a visit to the jail to-day; but I shall not attempt any description of its inmates, or their crimes, as I think the less familiar we are with the dark side of our nature the better. We were most politely received by Mr. Bisden, the governor of the jail, and his lady. This gentleman possesses an excellent farm, upon which are some of the finest sheep in the island, and his garden is the largest and most valuable in the neighbourhood of Hobart Town. I examined an apple, fourteen inches in circumference, gathered from a scion that had been but six months engrafted; and Mrs. Bisden obligingly presented me with a most beautiful specimen of a petrified mushroom, eighteen inches in circumference; as well as a petrifaction of what is termed native bread, being a fungus that is dug out of the ground.

Thursday, 17.—The first public races that were ever got up at Hobart Town commenced to-day. They took place at New Town, about two miles from the capital. This proceeding did not at all meet with the sanction of the Governor, who prohibited the attendance of all prisoners, whether those who were lodged in the barracks, assigned servants, or such as had tickets of leave. There were public races, however, held at Launceston about a fortnight previous to those at Hobart Town.

Friday, 18.—It was my intention to have left

town to-day, for the interior, with my friends, Mr. and Mrs. Kermode, but our departure was unfortunately deferred, in consequence of Mrs. K. having met with an accident on her way to the race-ground. I accompanied Mr. Kermode to examine some of the improvements which are going on in the town. We first directed our steps towards the new wharf, a work of no small magnitude and importance in a young colony, and one which is the source of much discussion and difference of opinion at the present moment. The imprudence of undertaking so gigantic a work, in the early state of the Colony, is loudly asserted by many of the settlers, who advocate the employment of money and labour in other measures of more immediate necessity. Assigned servants are required by them to erect buildings on their grants, or clear the grounds for cultivation; the public road from Hobart Town to Launceston being in a condition that renders a communication between these towns anything but easy. The facility of communication, between the settled parts of a new colony, must be generally admitted to be an object of primary importance. The new wharf, it was urged, was not at present requisite, as there were several, at which the cargoes of ships could be landed by means of boats; and one, in particular, might, at a trifling expense, have been extended to a sufficient depth of water, to permit vessels to come alongside. But many of the individuals, it seems, who were interested in,

and had power to promote, the new undertaking, possessed property in its immediate vicinity, the prospect of benefiting which, fully accounted, in the eyes of the opposite party, for their advocacy.

From the new wharf we proceeded a little further, in the same direction, to the battery; which is erected on a point of land, well calculated for a fort, that would afford protection to the harbour. The "battery," however, consisted only of a few rusty guns, part of which were dismounted; nor was there, as I was informed, any fort of sufficient strength to prevent an enemy's frigate going up the Derwent, and anchoring off Hobart Town; where they might with impunity destroy the shipping, lay the town under contribution, or level it to the ground.

There was a race-dinner at our hotel to-day; and I met a friend there, from the Cape of Good Hope, who had been to Swan River for the purpose of disposing of some Cape produce; but cash was so exceedingly scarce, and bills, in general, so little desirable, that he brought the greater portion of his stock hither, and was much more successful, Cape wine being greatly in requisition.

Saturday, 19.—The races concluded to-day, and went off in a much more orderly manner than had been anticipated. Their utility, in encouraging the improvement in the breed of horses in so young a colony, cannot be doubted; but this is, in some measure, overbalanced by the opportunities for dissipation which it gives a community, already too

much inclined in that direction. I allude, of course, to the convict branch of the population.

Monday, 21.—There have been a great many cases of fever, of a typhoid character, during my stay in Hobart Town, though the instances in which it terminated fatally were fortunately few. It was not confined to any particular class, but seemed to attack all orders, without respect to persons. The causes assigned as the origin of this epidemic, are the extreme dryness of the season, which generated malaria; and the unwholesomeness of the water with which the town is supplied. Fresh water could only be procured from a creek that runs through the centre of the town, and which, among other pollutions in its course, received the drainings of the tan-pits; this will sufficiently account for the evil effects which it produced. An aqueduct, lined with brick, was, however, in progress at this time, and had extended to the suburbs, near the barracks, in the vicinity of which a reservoir was in progress. The supply was to be obtained from a fine stream of water at the head of a valley, about a mile beyond the town. As the tide in the Derwent continues several miles above Hobart Town, a supply of fresh water could not of course be obtained from the river.

Tuesday, 22.—I left Hobart Town this morning, with Mr. and Mrs. Kermode, and their youngest daughter, with the intention of proceeding

with them, to their residence at the Saltpan Plains; and thence to Launceston with Mr. Haskett, who accompanied us in his gig. A little more than nine miles from Hobart Town, on the New Norfolk road, we crossed the Derwent, on a raft, at Green Point Ferry, with the carriage and horses. There was a small inn on each bank of the river; at one of which we obtained some English porter, at the *moderate* price of half-a-crown a bottle. About three-quarters of a mile above this ferry, a bridge is building over the Derwent, the want of which, at the present moment, is a source of much inconvenience. Having continued our course for six or seven miles, we crossed the bed of the *Jordan*, which is dry, except in winter, when there is a running stream. A very neat bridge has been recently built over this river, on the new line of road from the intended bridge over the Derwent. Twenty-three miles from Hobart Town we arrived at the Bagdad Inn, at which we stopped to refresh ourselves and horses, previous to our ascending Constitution Hill, which is noted as the scene of numberless robberies, committed by the bush-rangers. It seems we are indebted to these gentlemen, for the Scriptural names that have been given to the various places in this neighbourhood.

After dinner, we ascended the hill, and proceeded to Stiglitz's Inn at Green Ponds, twenty-nine miles from the capital, where we passed the night. The

appearance of the country, from Hobart Town to this place, is generally undulating, with hills of very moderate elevation. There is but little cultivation, the quantity of timber being excessive. The road, after crossing the Derwent, is exceedingly bad, but the scenery in the vicinity of Green Ponds and Cross Marsh is very picturesque, and the land valuable for grain. Several respectable settlers have established themselves here, and have, in general, good buildings on their farms. Many fine specimens of petrified wood have been found in the water courses of this part of the country, and also a variety of crystals. These are not confined, however, to this neighbourhood, but are frequently met with in various parts of the island. There are also some large basaltic columns on different parts of the coast.

Wednesday, 23.—We left Green Ponds at daylight, and proceeded about fourteen miles to Harrison's Inn, at Jericho, where we breakfasted. The road was very sandy and heavy, until we had passed Lovely Banks, which lies half-way between Green Ponds and Jericho. After breakfast we continued our journey for the distance of seven miles, until we arrived at Oatlands, where we found an officer, and detachment of the 17th regiment. There was also a police magistrate, with a jail, and barracks for prisoners, of whom from fifty to a hundred were employed in repairing the roads, and other Government works. There are but few settlers in this

neighbourhood, the best land having been principally granted to the magistrate; indeed, it is said, that this dismal place was made a township solely on account of the gentleman in question, who is a great favourite with the Governor. The road from Oatlands to Peter's Pass, about five miles, was excessively dreary, lying between high hills. But after we had proceeded a further distance of five miles, a delightful country opened upon us, and we soon entered the Saltpan Plains, which are the most extensive in the island. They lie exactly half-way between Hobart Town and Launceston. About sunset we reached the residence of Mr. Kermode, to which he has given the name of Mona Vale, in compliment to his wife, whose natal place is the Isle of Man. It is situated about two miles from the public road, and sixty-eight from Hobart Town. The house which he at that time occupied was built of wood, but he has since erected a handsome edifice of brick. In the immediate vicinity of his mansion is a beautiful lake, about a mile in length, and two hundred yards broad, with a depth of from thirty to forty feet water. A number of wild fowl make it a place of occasional resort, and several tame black swans considerably increase the beauty of its appearance. The plains are generally very level, the most elevated situation being that of a little hill near the lake, which was named after one of the first surveyors who visited that part of the island; but I recommended the change of its

designation to Mount Pleasant, on account of the agreeable nature of its situation. Mr. Kermode had a stock of 4000 sheep, and was engaged in the erection of a wall of loose stones, on the side of the hill next the lake, to serve for a sheepfold during the lambing season. It was formed like a horse shoe, opening towards the lake, so that they might have free access to the water. About half a mile from the lake, there is a swamp which covers 420 acres, and near its borders is a pit, twelve feet in depth, which is constantly supplied by a saline spring. Not far removed from this well a hillock rises abruptly, with a flat summit, which received the name of Don's Battery, in consequence of a man, nicknamed Don Morris, having defended himself on it for twenty-four hours against a number of the aborigines. The great elevation of these plains above the level of the sea, the extent of their range, and the quantity of saline matter in the pasturage, render them the best part of the island for feeding sheep and producing wool. Rock salt, lime-stone, free-stone, and iron-stone, besides a great variety of petrifactions, are found here. The climate is so healthy that Mr. Kermode has not had any illness in his family for five years, although it consisted of nearly twenty persons, including assigned servants.*

About four miles from Mr. Kermode's house is

* The prisoners who are assigned to poor settlers, call their masters, 'Dungaree settlers,' which is the name of the most common rice bags, or Indian wrappers.

Ross Bridge, built over the Macquarie river, which at this place is nearly dry during the summer, but after the heavy rains rises to a great height. This river has its source in the adjacent hills, and flows in a N. W. direction, until it falls into the Lake River, at Formosa, which river unites with the South Esk at Norfolk Plains. From this point it is by some persons called the South Esk, and by others the New River. After passing over a cataract at Launceston, it flows on and empties itself into the Tamar. The village of Ross, in the vicinity of the bridge, consists of about a dozen houses, a decent inn being of the number. An officer is stationed here, with a small detachment of soldiers; and also a gentleman of the Commissariat department, in charge of Government stores. About a quarter of a mile from the village is a race course, with a betting stand, where races had been held for the six preceding years, but they are now to be discontinued, in consequence of races having been established at Hobart Town. In the neighbourhood of Ross, and adjoining the Saltpan Plains, there was a government reserve of 32,000 acres of excellent land, well known by the name of the 'Ross Reserve.' Various conjectures were formed as to the motives of the local government in keeping so large a portion of the most valuable land in the island to itself, and which they were said to be farming at a loss, while many of the settlers were sent to look for their grants in remote and otherwise inferior places.

The general supposition was that it was reserved for the Church, and Government officers.

I passed my time very pleasantly with Mr. Kermode's family, until the morning of

Friday, 25,—when, immediately after breakfast, I set off with Mr. Haskett, in his gig, being accompanied by Mr. Kermode on horseback, as far as Ross Bridge. We proceeded through Campbell Town,* which lies about six miles beyond Ross, and is at present a mere village, though an officer and detachment of soldiers, together with a police magistrate, are stationed there. Its buildings include two inns, the jail, and blacksmith's shop. About two o'clock, we reached Wanstead Park, eleven miles from Ross Bridge, the residence of Mr. Willis, from whom I had received a congratulatory letter, with a most polite invitation to visit him, immediately on my arrival in the Colony. Before dinner we accompanied the ladies in a drive to Woodford Farm, the property of Mr. Willis; and in the evening we were entertained with music and singing.

Wanstead Park is a delightful estate, comprising about 9000 acres, 400 of which were, at this time, under cultivation, besides a garden of 15 acres, and two orchards. Gooseberries were so abundant, that, after gathering all that was necessary for the consumption of the family, and for making wine,

* There is another route from Ross to Launceston, by which you must proceed nearly parallel with the left bank of the Macquarie.

some bushels were allowed to rot on the ground. The orchards were equally prolific; and, with the last crop of apples, Mr. Willis had commenced the manufacture of cider, being the first person who made the attempt on the island. There were about 22 miles of fencing on his estate, and the buildings consisted of a large dwelling-house, newly erected; a smaller one, in which he previously resided; two capacious stables, granaries, thrashing and corn-mills, workshops, and other out-houses.

Saturday, 26.—Though the weather was so cold and showery this morning as to render the prospect of resuming our journey not very agreeable, we took leave of our kind friends, highly gratified with our visit.

The names assigned to places in this part of the island, are not particularly remarkable for elegance; we passed, on our way, a hollow, in which was a fine spring, with the cognomen of "Humphrey's Water Hole;" and, a little further on, some rich meadow land, known by the name of "Moll Smith's Bottom," having belonged to a woman who had been a convict, and came from Sydney to Launceston, with Colonel Patterson, in 1804. On passing the boundary of Wanstead Park, we entered Epping Forest, through which we had a dreary and difficult drive of five miles. We called at Mr. Wedge's Farm, ten miles from Wanstead, in the vain hope of obtaining a feed of Indian corn for our horse; but, at another farm, about a mile beyond

it, we were more successful, and met with a most hospitable reception from a new settler, of the name of Wood, who, we learnt, had been a Captain in the Army. He had not been more than twelve months in occupation of this farm; and yet, by wonderful industry, he had erected a very comfortable dwelling-house, one story in height above the ground-floor; sown and reaped sixty acres of wheat; made a good garden; and fenced in a considerable portion of his land. He placed before us some of the best cheese I had tasted in the Colony, and which was made under the superintendence of his wife. Up to this period, very few persons had made either butter or cheese for market, England and New South Wales having always been looked to, for these articles. It is equally surprising that Hobart Town was very badly supplied with fruit, vegetables, and poultry; and it was, therefore, generally supposed that a *dairy* farm, with a good garden, would succeed better than any other, in the vicinity of the capital.

Captain Wood had disembarked at Launceston, with his wife and ten children, and having at his command a little ready money, he very judiciously purchased some land in a desirable situation, instead of waiting in suspense, for a "chance grant" from Government; for my part, judging from the experience of others, I think it much more advantageous to purchase a farm that has been partly cleared, than to receive a grant of land, unless it was a part of some

choice "reserve." This gentleman had hired several persons, in addition to his assigned servants, to carry his plans into execution as quickly as possible; and he informed me it was his intention to have a large plantation of the Mymosa tree, for the express purpose of exporting its bark.

From Captain Wood's we proceeded to the residence of Mr. Nowland, a friend and countryman of Mr. Haskett, where we passed the night.

Sunday, 27.—We took leave of Mr. and Mrs. Nowland immediately after breakfast; and, having proceeded a mile from the house, we crossed the South Esk in a large ferry-boat, at a place called Perth, which is but a small village, with here and there a picturesque residence. There are several good farms in the neighbourhood, and two corn-mills, one belonging to Major M'Leod, and the other to Lieut. Ritchie, R.N. The South Esk is at this place a wide, and in winter time a deep and rapid stream. Its banks are clothed with beautiful shrubs. The ferry established here, over the South Esk, is a very inconvenient mode of transporting cattle, carriages, &c., besides which it has not unfrequently been carried away by the force of the stream; and the public were once put to the inconvenience of waiting three weeks for its return, during which time there was no mode of conveying cattle or carriages across the river, and it was too deep to be forded. A few years since the old punt sunk, while in the act of transporting

some working cattle across the river, and from its not being deemed worthy of repair, the inhabitants of Perth, as well as many of the settlers in the neighbourhood, petitioned the Lieutenant-Governor for a bridge to be built, instead of another punt; but no answer was returned to their petition, and a new punt was built.

It was but ten miles from this place to Launceston; and our way lay over a road in excellent order, being, with the first nine miles on leaving Hobart Town, the only portion of the distance of 120 miles between those towns, that had as yet been regularly made. The convicts would, therefore, be much more usefully employed in finishing this road, and constructing the necessary bridges, than in weaving cloth and making shoes, that might be obtained, at but little increase of expense, from the mother country. Many excellent tracts of land are at present unavailable, because the want of proper roads, and the rugged nature of the passes, would be a great drawback to settlers in such places, from the difficulty of communication, and the consequent expense of bringing their produce to market.

We arrived at Launceston soon after noon, and put up at the Cornwall Hotel, a good second-rate country inn. Several gentlemen favoured us with a visit, while we were taking some refreshment, after which we set out to explore the town. On the wharfs we observed a quantity of the Mymosa bark, that was lying there, ready for exportation to England; there

being at the time three ships, whose princpal lading consisted of it. This bark was about to be shipped with the outside decayed coat still attached to it, although it not only possesses no tanning principle in itself, but is exceedingly injurious, inasmuch as it has a decided tendency to blacken the leather, and weaken the astringent properties of the other portions. If the persons who shipped this bark understood its quality better, or would take the trouble which the Dutch and Flemish people do, they might reckon on a considerable ultimate advantage from the higher character it would bear, and the increased demand that would arise for it in the European market. Economy in freight should, also, be no trifling inducement for the removal of all extraneous substances. The Mymosa, I am informed, possesses the tanning principle to a greater extent than any other known bark in the world, with the single exception of the Bengal Catechu. If an establishment were formed for preparing the extract in the Colony, their efforts would be attended with much more success than in exporting the bark itself. Copper utensils are, of course, requisite in preparing the extract.

Monday, 28.—I found the morning exceedingly foggy, owing, as the inhabitants informed me, to some marshy ground on the opposite side of the North Esk. Many people were of opinion that this marsh, if properly drained, would have been a much better site for the town than the pre-

sent, as the anchorage would be far superior, below the mouth of the Esk, to that near which the town now stands. There is little doubt that, at no very distant period, when a bridge is built over the river, and the population increases, the town will be extended in that direction.

We heard constant complaints, during our journey, of the Surveying Department, in consequence of their not measuring the respective grants with more expedition, the settlers being frequently engaged in disputes about the precise boundaries of their various estates. The impatience of the settlers, however, was in general inconsistent; for a much greater number of assistant surveyors would be required to answer all their demands, and yet they already complained loudly of the expense of that department.

Tuesday, 29.—My time was a good deal engaged both yesterday and to-day, in receiving and paying visits; all the respectable residents of the town appearing desirous of shewing me every polite attention in their power. I found time, however, to visit the jail this afternoon, being accompanied by Mr. Legge, the Sheriff, who kindly volunteered his services on the occasion. There were 57 convict-prisoners under charges of felony; principally for cattle and sheep stealing: there were some cases of highway robbery, but none of murder. There were a few "free" persons confined for debt; and I found here also a native boy, who

had been employed as a guide to some soldiers in pursuit of his black brethren, and who, having naturally endeavoured to escape, was placed here for security, and not for punishment, as appeared from his being well taken care of, and allowed to go about the jail, and amuse himself as he thought proper. He was a heavy, stupid boy, apparently little better than an idiot: he slept the greater part of his time, seeming indeed to care for little else but eating and sleeping. This description may be applied, with truth, to the majority of the aborigines, who appear to be a treacherous, bloodthirsty, and barbarous race; though the severity with which they are treated, and the provocation they have received, are, I fear, much greater than the authorities are either aware of, or willing to acknowledge.

Wednesday, 30.—At three o'clock this morning, I set off in a whale-boat, with Mr. Legge, to visit George Town, at the mouth of the Tamar, being a distance of forty miles, by water, below Launceston. The morning was cold and dreary when we first set out, but after the sun rose, it soon dispelled the fog, and we glided pleasantly and rapidly along, listening to the interesting description, given us by the boatmen, of the various places as we passed. We landed at George Town about an hour before noon, and repaired to the only inn of which the town could boast, though it was not a very desirable refuge, containing, as it did, but one

sitting-room, and one bed-room, for strangers. They contrived, however, to put a good breakfast and dinner before us. We found Major Wellman on the point of embarking for Launceston, with a detachment of the 57th regiment. Mr. Clark, the magistrate, called upon us, and obligingly offered to become our cicerone; we accordingly accompanied him over the hospital, jail, school, and female factory. The building, devoted to the school, had formerly been the vestry-room of the old church, which was now in ruins; and the house which was built as a residence for the clergyman, and which was the best in the town, was occupied at this time by the female prisoners. The jail and hospital were also in very bad condition, the public buildings having been greatly neglected since the establishment of Launceston: indeed George Town had more the appearance of a deserted village, than the flourishing place which the sanguine expectations of its founders led them to anticipate. Private buildings had been suspended, most of the inhabitants having proceeded to Launceston, leaving behind them but a few fishermen, and petty traders, to supply the wants of the population of the town. Notwithstanding the present gloom of its appearance, there was still but little doubt that it would gradually increase in size and importance, as it must eventually participate in the advantages arising from the increasing prosperity of Launceston, and the extension of cultivation in that part

of the country; besides which, the navigation of the Tamar is so hazardous for large ships, that it is more than probable, when steam-boats are in common use, many vessels will discharge and take in their cargoes here, in preference to risking the dangers of the navigation to Launceston. A good road will also be made between these towns; at present there is but a mere bridle path, which is not only bad but dangerous, from the chance of being waylaid, and killed, by the aborigines.* A barbarous murder was perpetrated by them, about this time, which will serve to shew the savage nature of their dispositions. A settler having left his hut, to perform some work at a little distance, his wife took a walk into the garden with a child in her arms, when some natives, who no doubt had watched the departure of her husband, rushed forward and instantly dispatched both her and the child with a shower of spears; after which they robbed the hut and made their escape.

In the evening we proceeded to East Head, which forms one side of the entrance of the Tamar, and is exactly four miles from George Town. On this Head have been erected a beacon, signal post, and pilot station. A light-house was much wanted, and has, I understand, been since erected. Numbers of fine fish may be taken outside the Heads. We passed a marsh that is overflowed by the tide,

* This cause of apprehension is removed, by the subsequent transfer of the whole of the aborigines to an island in Bass's Straits.

and which has been made an excellent fish-pond, having a barrier of wicker-work to secure the fish as the tide recedes.

The entrance of the Tamar lies between two head-lands, called the East and West Heads, while the eastern and western mountains gradually rise on each side of the valley through which the river runs. The course of the river is very serpentine, but it is navigable, for vessels drawing fourteen feet, the whole way to Launceston, where it forms a junction with the North and South Esk. The navigation is, however, rendered rather difficult in some parts by the strong eddies, especially in Whirlpool Reach, where the ship Kains was lost, during my stay in New South Wales. The entrance is also dangerous, in consequence of numerous reefs and sunken rocks, to avoid which much caution is requisite.

There were two pilots living at George Town, but the Captain of the port resided at Launceston. This was a Mr. Walsh, who had been an officer in the Bridgewater at the time she sailed from New South Wales (10th of August, 1803), in company with the ship Cato, and H.M.S. Porpoise, Lieutenant Fowler, R.N., commander, on board of which vessel was the celebrated navigator, Flinders. The desertion of the two latter vessels by the Captain of the Bridgewater is too well known to require a recital; but as the ultimate fate of the Bridgewater herself is not so generally known, I will in-

troduce a short account of it. The fact of her two companions having run on a coral reef was evident to all on board the Bridgewater, and when the Captain expressed his intention of proceeding on his voyage, some of his officers remonstrated strongly with him on the inhumanity of abandoning the crews of those vessels, who had escaped from the wreck to a small part of the shoal that was above the level of the sea. Their endeavours to induce him to approach the reef to leeward to afford them assistance, were, however, useless, as he persisted in his intention of prosecuting his voyage. They were thus abandoned to their own resources, from whence they were providentially delivered through the great exertions of Captain Flinders, who reached Sydney in an open boat on the 8th of September, where he procured vessels, and speedily repaired to their relief; while the unfortunate Bridgewater, with her perverse Captain, foundered at sea on her passage from Bombay to England. Mr. Walsh and another officer had left her in India, in consequence of a dispute with the Captain arising from the above affair; thus they were providentially preserved, from the circumstance of their having advocated the cause of humanity.

Captain Flinders' long detention at the Mauritius, where he arrived in a schooner, on his way from New South Wales to England, is recorded in his own interesting narrative; and Captain Fowler's service in the China Fleet is also such a matter of

interest, occasioned by the wreck of the Porpoise which he commanded, that it is not likely to be forgotten in the maritime history of our country. At a subsequent period, Mr. Walsh, when in command of the ship Claudine, discovered a new passage in Torres' Straits, through which he sailed in eighteen hours, exclusive of the time consumed in anchoring at night. This passage has since been entitled the Claudine Channel.

Thursday, 31.—Mr. Clark and Lieutenant Bainbridge of the 57th, breakfasted with us, after which we took leave of them, to return to Launceston. The first island on our way back was called Middle Island, from its position. It is well situated for a fort to protect the entrance of the river. The rain commenced shortly after our departure from George Town, and continued during the whole of our journey, so that after seven hours pulling, we arrived at Launceston, cold, wet, and hungry. The rain had made the ground so soft that we were up to our ancles in mud, and had great difficulty in getting along the streets. Their present condition, however, was not by any means so bad as it frequently is; not long since a cart loaded with flour was leaving the town, having a drunken woman sitting on the top, with a child in her arms; by a sudden jolt she was thrown off, and pitching on her head, was buried to her waist in the mud, so that she was nearly smothered before she could be extricated. Another accident happened shortly before my arrival, to a

wedding party on their way home; but their mishap may be attributed, perhaps, as much to the hilarity which followed the wedding dinner, as to the badness of the road. They were returning in a bullock-cart, and had nearly reached their destination, when the cart was overturned, and the bride, unhappily, was not only severely bruised, but lost the greater part of one ear; the bride's-maid was equally unfortunate, having been nearly squeezed to death by a five-gallon cask of wine, while the bridegroom and his male friends, who occupied the fore part of the vehicle, escaped uninjured.

We dined at our hotel, where there was a *Table d'Hote*, at which we met several new settlers, one of whom was a brother-officer of mine. They all appeared to be very well pleased with their novel line of life, sanguinely expecting to realize large fortunes, which, doubtless, the prudent portion of them will effect in time.

Good Friday, April 1.—The weather being very warm and fine, and as there was no morning service in the church, I accompanied Mr. Walsh to the Cataract of the South Esk, about a mile from the town. The inhabitants are obliged to send hither for the water they use for domestic purposes, that in the river being quite brackish. I was informed, that some families were at an expense of 30*l.* a-year for having the water they require brought to them in carts. The difficulty of procuring it has rendered the labours of that useful

class — washerwomen—rather expensive, as they must either submit to the cost of procuring it, or the inconvenience of repairing to the Cataract, where they make fires, and wash and dry their clothes on the spot. The latter plan is most generally adopted. Their charges are five shillings per dozen; while at Hobart Town they are but three. Water might be conveyed from the Cataract in pipes all over the town, with the greatest facility; and, I was told, that the inhabitants volunteered to form a company, and raise the money for that purpose, as well as for building a bridge * over the North Esk, in the direction of the road to George Town. The Colonial Government, however, for some unaccountable reason, withheld their permission to carry the said improvements into effect; thus the inhabitants of Hobart Town and Launceston, which are both situated in the immediate vicinity of a fine river, suffer serious inconvenience from the want of this necessary article, through the lack of proper attention on the part of the authorities.

Saturday, 2.—I left Launceston this morning, with Lieutenant Dutton, R. N. for the purpose of proceeding to the Van Diemen's Land Horse-Company's estate, named Cressy, which establishment

* Since the time of my visit to the Colony, the Government have built a bridge over this river, on the direct road to George Town; but it is built on piles, which are not likely to be very durable, as they are not charred, and none of the sap-wood is removed.

was under his superintendence. I took my departure, not without regret, in occasioning which, however, the comforts or conveniences that the place afforded, had but little share, being in itself the mere skeleton of a town. The buildings, in general, are of but an inferior order; the streets little else than bad roads; and the wharfs mere temporary erections. It possesses capabilities, nevertheless, which may, ere long, be turned to advantage; and as the best soil is to be found on this side of the island, it may fairly be inferred, that not only its trade and population will rapidly increase, but that, at no distant period, it may become a formidable rival to the present capital.

My regret at leaving Launceston so soon, was occasioned by a desire to become better acquainted with some of the residents, among whom I am induced to allude particularly to a Mr. Lawrence, from whose superior intelligence I had hoped to derive much useful information respecting the Colony. This gentleman left England in a small cutter, which he purchased for the occasion, bringing with him considerable property, that it was but natural to expect would have procured him great influence in the island. His intellectual powers and gentlemanly deportment, rendered it rather surprising that he was not invited to become a Member of Council; but this neglect was accounted for by his not being a favourite with, or too independent for the Colonial Government. From

the specimen which I had of his abilities and experience, I think it is to be regretted, that they were not rendered more available.

Mr. Lawrence's son is one of the best botanists in the island. In the course of his rambles through the woods, he has had two or three narrow escapes from being speared by the natives. I had also the pleasure of passing some time with Capt. Lyttleton, the Police Magistrate, and Mr. Westbrooke.

We left Launceston at eight o'clock this morning, taking the old road for Norfolk Plains, with the intention of breakfasting with Mr. Cooke, at Cookefield, about eight miles distant. On our way we met the celebrated Moll Smith, on horseback, who stopped to speak with Mr. Dutton. After breakfast, Mr. Cooke accompanied us through the best cultivated portion of Norfolk Plains, to Cressy, calling in the way on Mr. W. Archer, at Wattle Park, and Mr. Thomas Archer, at Woolmers.

Sunday, 3.—Messrs. Ebden and Flaharty, arrived from Launceston to breakfast, a distance of 20 miles; and Mr. Kermode joined us about noon. We proceeded over the Company's farm, and visited the dwelling-house that was first erected on the estate. We afterwards repaired to the garden, which is very extensive and well stocked with fruit, forest, and shrub trees. My companions were also gratified with an inspection of the beautiful horses belonging to the establishment.

About two o'clock we mounted our poor hacks, in comparison with the splendid animals just exhibited, and rode to the farm of Lieutenant Skardon, R. N. about four miles distant. We passed through a dense forest, thickly strewed with fallen and decayed trees, and returned at sunset to dinner.

Monday, 4.—I accompanied Lieutenant Dutton and Mr. Kermode, this afternoon, to the residence of Mr. Joseph Archer, at Pensanger, a few miles distant from Cressy. Pensanger is a fine estate, being extensively cleared, and in a high state of cultivation; the Lake River forms its limit to the north. Mr. Archer possesses some of the finest flocks and herds in the Colony; the average value of one flock of 900 Merino sheep being, at this time, 10*l.* per head. He had also a very large garden, well stocked with fruit trees, and made this year 300 gallons of gooseberry wine, which we found an excellent substitute for Champagne.

Tuesday, 5.—Having taken leave of our hospitable friends this morning, we proceeded on our return to Hobart Town. Soon after leaving Pensanger, we passed through Mr. Lawrence's estate, Formosa, so called from its beautiful scenery, being considered one of the most picturesque spots in the island. Shortly after we met with Mr. Fletcher, who gave us an invitation, which we readily accepted, as we could not have had another opportunity of obtaining refreshment until we reached the place at which we purposed passing the night. Our host

had been in the army; and, like many who had abandoned a profession, for what they supposed a more lucrative employment, found himself not only out of his element, but with little prospect of realizing those golden dreams in which he had indulged. It would appear that the failure, or ill-success of many of the settlers in this Colony, may be chiefly attributed to their undertaking more, at first, than their finances or their labour will enable them to accomplish. By endeavouring thus to carry into effect, views that far exceed their means, they are frequently brought to a stand-still in the midst of operations which it is ruinous to stop, and to proceed with which they are often obliged to obtain loans at an exorbitant rate of interest.

About three o'clock Mr. Kermode and I resumed our journey, and reached, at the close of the day, the abode of Mr. Gatensby, a respectable Yorkshire farmer, who came out as steerage passenger in the ship in which Mr. Kermode left England. The latter, finding him a very intelligent and experienced man in his calling, was happy to avail himself of his conversation during the voyage. He brought out with him, besides his wife and seven children, a blacksmith and wheelwright; and having set up a water-mill, which he had purchased in England, he used it in grinding wheat for his neighbours at a shilling a bushel; and as it was kept in constant employment, the profits resulting from it far surpassed his expectations. With the assistance of

his sons and a few government servants, he had cleared and cultivated a great portion of his original grant of 1500 acres; and in addition to the small dwelling-house he built on taking possession, he had just completed the erection of an excellent stone farm-house, 48 feet square, with one story and attics above the ground floor, the latter of which was divided into four apartments; one being used as the kitchen, another as the dairy, and the remaining two for general purposes. The kitchen, which was very capacious, served for their sitting as well as cooking apartment; and here he entertained his friends, and casual travellers, in a style that was equally hospitable, and void of ceremony.

Wednesday, 6. — After breakfast this morning we proceeded on our journey, and having stopped but a few minutes at the inn near Ross Bridge, to refresh ourselves with a glass of good English porter, we arrived at Mona Vale, about three o'clock. We were welcomed by Mrs. Kermode on our return, and I had once more an opportunity of experiencing the kindness of this amiable family, with whom I remained until

Monday, 11. — When I set out for Hobart Town with Mr. Kermode in his carriage. We stopped about ten o'clock to refresh our horses at Peter's Pass, where there is an excellent spring of water, and reached Harrison's Inn, at Jericho, about four o'clock, where we met Dr. Wilson, Surgeon in the Royal Navy, who accompanied

us in our route to Green Ponds. The road was in such a wretched condition part of the way, that we could only proceed at the rate of two miles an hour, and experienced much difficulty in avoiding the numerous holes, which render it very dangerous after dark. It was consequently very late, when we reached Stiglitz's Inn, where, according to the American fashion, we had eggs, and different viands, with our tea; a practice in general usage in this Colony, from the habit of dining early, which is common among the settlers.

Tuesday, 12.—We left Green Ponds soon after sunrise, made a short stage of six miles to Butcher's Inn at Bagdad, from which we departed at eleven, and passing Green Point Ferry at two, arrived in Hobart Town about four o'clock.

Wednesday, 13.—I had hastened my return, in order to engage my passage on board the Red Rover, which was about to sail for Sydney. I accompanied Captain Armstrong (my fellow-passenger from China), to the ship, and as he was bound for the same place, we agreed to pay the usual sum of 10*l.* each for our passage.

Thursday, 14.—I dined to-day with Colonel Logan and the officers of the 63rd regiment, by special invitation from the whole mess; indeed I cannot feel sufficiently grateful for the kind and polite attention which I received from these gentlemen during my stay in Van Diemen's Land. My previous acquaintance with some of them in

England was, no doubt, conducive to this friendly reception.

Sunday, 17.— I paid a farewell visit to my friends, Mr. and Mrs. Gregson, at Risden, to-day, and on

Monday, the 18*th*, returned to Hobart Town, at which I had scarcely landed, when I was informed that the Red Rover had received orders from the Governor to get under weigh immediately. This vessel had been chartered in England to convey prisoners to Van Diemen's Land, and Sydney; having performed the first part of her contract, she was now despatched to New South Wales with a detachment of the 17th regiment, and also to a few run-away convicts. Previous to my embarkation, I met with the celebrated painter, Mr. Glover, who had just arrived in the colony. He expressed himself highly delighted with the scenery of which he had been able to get a view, in his journey across the island, from Launceston to Hobart Town.

The peculiar situation of Van Diemen's Land, as a convict settlement, has made it the arena of a discussion, involving one of the most interesting points in the whole range of the morals of legislation,—the question of transportation as a punishment. Connected with this inquiry is another important topic, upon the right understanding and treatment of which, the prosperity of the Colony mainly depends,—I mean the system of granting land.

Archbishop Whateley's work on secondary punishments has given occasion to considerable difference of opinion, in which, as may naturally be supposed, the residents of Van Diemen's Land are found to be in direct opposition to the arguments advanced by the Archbishop, and those who agree with him in his objections to the present system of transportation. It is agreed on the one hand, that transportation is ineffective as a punishment, and that the criminal who is sentenced for a limited term of years to Van Diemen's Land, to be there assigned to a service under the superintendence of the settlers, is placed in an improved situation, instead of being punished, and that, by inference, the proper way to deter men from evil practices is to make terrible examples of the guilty at home, by confining them in jails, and otherwise coercing them. On the other hand, it is urged that transportation is a punishment of the most severe and painful nature—that the disgrace it inflicts is irremediable—that the separation from home and friends is a measure of extreme, but wholesome condemnation—that at the same time it presents means of restoring the moral habits, and reclaiming to society all those offenders in whom the sense of morality is not extinct; that it is a wiser system than that of jails, which only have the effect of hardening the mind, and by the contagious influence of evil intercourse, increasing the sphere of crime; and that it affords to the Colonial settler a ready

resource of labour, without which he would find it very difficult to prosecute his speculations with success. Such are the leading features of the arguments on both sides, in so far as transportation is concerned, and it will be seen that the side which the settlers take is that which leans to their interests, but which, as it occurs to me, is also the side on which there is the greatest amount of moral truth. It appears to me that there can hardly be any doubt that transportation is effective, not merely as a preventive, by the final nature of its operation, but as a punishment, by the direct and complete control it exercises over the offender. The utility of convict labour must also be allowed to be very great in a new country, where labour is in such constant demand, and where the system of surveillance is now brought to such perfection, that it is almost impossible for the convict to escape from the penal obligations under which he is placed. In addition to these arguments in its favour, is one still stronger than all the rest, the inducements which it holds out for the return of offenders to the paths of virtue. It cannot be denied that the system of our jails is not conducive to the cultivation of moral habits, and that the mingling of convicts with free servants under a strict plan of discipline, is better adapted to reclaim them, than the chains of a prison, or the vicious associations, with which such confinement is connected.

With respect to the mode of granting lands, it

would seem also that the advocates of the old system of granting small pieces of waste land, subject to a small quit rent, or as a purchase payable by easy instalments, to emigrant settlers who possess the means of improving such grants; have decidedly the advantage over those who introduced the plan of exposing the unappropriated territory to a periodical sale; in consequence of which it is usually bought up by old and wealthy landed proprietors, who annex their new acquisitions as sheep and cattle pastures to their former possessions. The effect of the abolition of the former system of granting land has been such, that since that period scarcely a single agricultural settler has emigrated from England, to cultivate any of those waste lands. The desire to promote pauper emigration, partly with a view to the relief of the distressed districts in England, and partly to correct certain abuses that had crept into the old system, was the avowed cause of this change; but it is much to be feared that the consequences have not been such as the promoters of the design anticipated. It has been found that the influx of pauper labour has drawn into the Colony a class of persons the least desirable for the wants of a place where so much convict labour could already be obtained; and that the pauper emigrants have not only been disappointed, for the most part, in their own views, but have been productive of much insubordination amongst the convicts in the

service of the settlers, by clashing with them in the field of employment.

On the whole, it would seem that the encouragement of independent emigrants, who have sufficient resources of their own to enable them to cultivate the tracts assigned to them, would be a more beneficial system for the Colony than that which has of late years been adopted; and that the undue introduction of pauper labourers into a settlement where labour to a certain extent exists already, which it is the interest of the Government, and the Mother Country, to employ in full, is calculated to precipitate many evils. These opinions are the result of personal observation, and not of mere theoretical examination of the subject, and if they possess any value, it is because they are practical, and not speculative. The object to which they point is of the highest importance to the welfare of the settlement, and demands from every one who takes an interest in it the most mature consideration.

CHAP. XIII.

Departure from Van Diemen's Land—Bass's Straits—Melancholy Fate of the Discoverer—Arrival at New South Wales—Author's Reasons for abridging his MSS.—Excursion in the Interior to the Northward—First Steam-Packet on the Hunter—Journey to the Southward—Morrumbidgee—Argyle—Goulburn Plains—Journey to Bathurst, and back to Sydney—Author joins a Party of Exploration, to find a Road from Narriga to Jervis Bay—Adventures and Observations by the way—Disappointment of the Expectations of the Party—Botany Bay—La Perouse's Monument—Tomb of a French Priest—Inscription on a Gum-tree—Tablet to Cook the Navigator—Culpable Indifference of the Colonists—Soil of New South Wales—Aborigines—Colonization.

A SLIGHT delay occurred in our departure from Van Diemen's Land, occasioned by the Captain being obliged to wait for an order to receive and victual the troops. He also discovered that he had got another ship's charter-party, instead of his own, from the Colonial office. At eight o'clock in the morning, however, on the 19th of April, 1831, we left our anchorage and stood out to sea. Having a fresh southerly wind, and the Red Rover being a fine fast-sailing ship, we cleared the smooth waters of the Derwent with great rapidity. But the moment the tranquil and picturesque scene which the shores of this beautiful river present, faded from our view, a sight of a very different character burst upon us. We were now launched into the

great Southern Ocean, without any known land between us and the Pole; and, as the wind blew strong from that quarter, we had a rough sea and threatening sky, while, to leeward, there was a foaming surge breaking on the shore of an iron-bound coast, along which we were sailing in a parallel line, at about three miles distant. Cape Pillar, past which we sailed, before we bore away for New Holland, is a vast high wedge projecting into the ocean, and crowned with a range of lofty single columns. The figure of the shore between Cape Balsatic and Cape Pillar, is a continued succession of basaltic formations, displaying a steep and imposing front as the voyager proceeds, gazing with mute admiration at those stupendous works of nature.

The most interesting point of the voyage from Van Diemen's Land to New South Wales, is the eastern entrance of Bass's Straits, which we crossed. The melancholy fate of the fearless navigator, who gave his name to these Straits, invests them with a deep and painful interest. If the landsman feels affected, as he must naturally do, when, in the desert, or the ancient forest, he meets some memorial of those intrepid travellers who first explored the untrodden wilds, and fixed their places for ever on the map, what must not be the sensations with which the voyager passes over the waves that engulfed the devoted sons of science, who, in the midst of unknown dangers, and encompassed by perils against

which it was often impossible for them to make provision, prosecuted their arduous researches in the cause of knowledge, and the diffusion of the arts of civilized life? The associations with which the sea is connected, its aspect of desolation and appalling grandeur, the hopeless extent of the waste, lying bare as far as the eye can reach to where the horizon dips, like a cloud, into the apparently limitless ocean, the isolation from all means of succour, and the helplessness of man against the wild fury of the elements, are circumstances that give to the disasters at sea, a character of much more thrilling interest than we can attach, much as our sympathies may be worked, to any accidents or fatalities that befall the adventurer by land. I felt this truth very forcibly when our vessel bounded like a cork over the swell of those memorable Straits. Poor Bass! who, in January, 1798, had the honour of settling the disputed point, whether there was, or was not, a passage for ships between Van Diemen's Land and New Holland, and for whose exertions, Flinders, very properly, considered he merited the distinction of having his name immortalized, in the Straits which were the scene of his extraordinary exertions; poor Bass, was destined to a fate as melancholy, as his life had been useful and disinterested. The last fact known of him, is that he sailed from New South Wales in a merchant brig, belonging to himself, with the intention of returning to England by way

of Cape Horn. He was never heard of more! and it is supposed that the vessel must either have foundered in a heavy gale, or been shattered to pieces on one of the numerous islands of ice that float upon those seas. As a point of some historical interest, connected with this subject, I may add that Captain Brookes, of the Atlas, was the first person who navigated a ship through Bass's Straits, on his voyage from England to New South Wales, in January 1802, and that Commodore Boudan was the next, who arrived in Port Jackson about a fortnight or three weeks after the Atlas.

Our voyage to Sydney was accomplished in ten days. My readers who have accompanied me thus far on my adventures round the world, and who, perhaps, will give me credit for possessing at least an anxious desire to collect such information as might be likely to yield either instruction or amusement, have, probably, already anticipated, that a country so thoroughly sifted by previous and subsequent inquirers as New South Wales, could furnish but little matter with which it would be profitable to occupy their attention. My object has not been to make a book, but to furnish the results of long and arduous journeys of investigation, with a view to contribute something, however slight, to those stores of information for which society is indebted to the exertions of practical travellers. My principal difficulty throughout the, to me, laborious yet delightful task of preparing these volumes for the

press, from my voluminous, and, of necessity, superabundant manuscripts, has been to *select* and not to *supply* the materials for publication. In every country I visited, I gathered more information than I afterwards considered it expedient or convenient to publish; and if I felt this redundant accumulation, in lands which have been hitherto but seldom described, it may be easily conceived how much more I feel it, in reference to such a dependency of the British Crown, which has been so often described, as Australasia. It is now nearly four years since I left that country, and at that time it had not been quite so fully explored as it has been since; besides that, although Wentworth, Cunningham, and others, had written fully and clearly upon it, there yet remained much to be said upon points which prejudice had mis-stated or obscured; or which, in the contest of struggling interests, had been altogether overlooked. I thus felt the necessity of extending my inquiries as far as my opportunities enabled me to penetrate, and the information I collected, amounts in quantity to a bulk equal to one of these volumes. Having, however, pledged myself to the public to limit my work to four volumes, and being well satisfied that the further extension of the publication, with a view to embrace a detailed narrative of my different journeys through the interior, would be infinitely less interesting and novel, than that part of my travels which related to China, I have endeavoured to allot my assigned

space, in proportion to the interest of the different subjects. New South Wales is a field already so diligently reaped, and China so much resembles a newly discovered land, particularly since the abolition of the East India Company's commercial privileges has rendered our comparative unacquaintance with it the more glaring, that I believe I adopt that course which the reader will consider the most desirable, in passing rapidly over the one, and giving to the other all the room which its great importance demands. What I have to say, therefore, concerning New South Wales, shall be compressed into as brief a compass as possible.

My residence there filled a period of eleven months, during which time I was almost constantly engaged in excursions into the interior, and in visiting all the points of interest connected with the past history of the place, its present aspect and prospects, and the future projects for its improvement. On the whole, I may confidently say that there exists in the Colony a great many sources of reasonable prosperity, from which the happiness of its population in years yet to come may be safely predicted. But of course, as we find in all other infant settlements, there still remains many difficulties to be surmounted, before those just hopes can be realized.

After remaining a fortnight at Sydney, I left that town in the Lambton, cutter, to visit the Australasian Agricultural Company's Establishment, at Port

Stephens, which was then under the superintendence of Sir Edward Parry; and passing from thence to Maitland, and Newcastle, tracked the river Hunter to its source, returning again to Maitland, and from that place to Sydney by steam, having been fortunate enough, at the cost of traversing with unusual speed a very bad and rugged road, to arrive in time for the departure of the Sophia Jane, the first steam packet that ever navigated the waters of the Hunter. The occasion was one of great congratulation and rejoicing to the settlers on that line, and the two steamers which were then, for the first time, introduced into the Colony, the William the Fourth, and the Sophia Jane, were appropriately called the harvest carts of the garden of New South Wales, in consequence of their great importance to the internal intercourse of the agriculturists.

In the following month (July) I left Sydney again for a tour in the interior, and passing through Argyle, proceeded in a south-westerly direction to the shores of the river Morrumbidgee (Great and Good), which forms the south-western boundary of the Colony. This river, which is deep, rapid, and wide, is not fordable, and on approaching its banks I felt the wind, accompanied by occasional hail, blowing very keenly from the southward; but the view of the snowy mountains, and the ranges in its immediate vicinity, abundantly repay the traveller for the inconveniences to which the trip personally exposes

him. From the Morrumbidgee I returned to Argyle, and after traversing Goulburn Plains, I made a de-tour through an inner range of hills at the back of the Blue Mountains, and thence proceeded on the route to Bathurst. On my arrival at Bathurst it was my intention to have proceeded to the northward, still keeping on the western side of the Blue Mountain range, about 150 miles, until I came to Liverpool Plains, nearly in a line with the head of the Hunter, where I proposed to cross the chain, and after lingering a short time with my friends in that neighbourhood, to make the best of my way down to Sydney. But this intention was frustrated by adverse circumstances. The continual rains had swollen the rivers and flooded the low grounds to such a degree that the country was impassable, and, although there was no scarcity of horses, and the people were so much in want of money, as to be obliged to carry on their dealings chiefly in barter, I could not procure either horses or guides for hire, to enable me even to attempt the prosecution of my desire. In this situation I was compelled to abandon my intention, and to take the new line of road over Mount Vittoria, which was at that time in forward progress, and has since been completed. Yet even here the difficulty of procuring a guide was such, that I was obliged to apply to Government for permission to be attended by one of the mounted police part of the way, which was readily granted to me. On my journey across

the mountain I visited the celebrated cataract, called the Campbell Cataract, by Governor Macquarie, but afterwards re-christened the Bougainville Cataract, by Sir Thomas Brisbane; the former in honour of his lady, the latter in honour of the French Commodore who visited it. The summit of the waterfall is 2800 feet above the level of the sea, and here, much to the horror of the serjeant of police who accompanied me, I stood on the brink of the perpendicular rock that looks down into the yawning abyss, which receives the descending torrent. My companion entreated me not to approach the fearful spot, assuring me that he had been there with some distinguished persons, who would not venture to gaze into that awful depth until he had got a secure hold of them; but I requested him not to touch me, giving him an assurance that I had a complete control over my nerves, and that although I was perfectly conscious of the awful chasm at my feet, I encountered no risk whatever in advancing to the extremity of the ledge of rock. While I stood there, contemplating in sightless wonder, the sublimity of the scene, I could not help thinking of blind Gloster at the cliffs of Dover; the situation was very similar, and my imagination easily supplied equivalent figures to that of the one, who, "half-way down hung gathering samphire, dreadful trade!"

After my return to Sydney on this occasion I remained there until the following month, when I

undertook an expedition of a more novel character than any upon which I had previously entered. As this journey had a practical object in view, and carried me through a part of the country which is not generally well known, I will venture upon a little more detail in my narrative of it, than I have hitherto indulged in my previous excursions.

On the 10th of October I set out from Sydney in company with Lieut. Futter, R.N., for Argyle, with the intention of joining a party who proposed to perform a journey over the coast range of mountains to the sea, near Jervis Bay, for the purpose of ascertaining whether it would be practicable to make a road from Argyle to the coast. In the afternoon, a short distance beyond Liverpool, we met Mr. Ryrie, who informed Lieut. Futter that his overseer had been barbarously murdered at an out-station, by some of the men under his charge. In consequence of this information we hastened forwards, passing the first night at Kirkham, with Lieut. Vine, R.N. the second at Bong Bong, and reached Lumley on the third, a distance of one hundred and forty miles from Sydney. On our arrival, Lieut. Futter repaired to Goulburn Plains to inquire into the circumstances of his overseer's death, and obtain the assistance of the magistrate in prosecuting the implicated party. Finding that he was likely to be detained, I determined to proceed without waiting his return, and started early on the 17th for Mr. Ryrie's farm, Arn-Prior, by a different route from that which I

had taken on a previous occasion. I proceeded as far as Lake Bathurst, and then crossed the country in an easterly direction, but did not reach the farm of Mr. Ryrie till long after dark, the ignorance of my guide having greatly increased the distance, as I might have made my way through the bush in half the time. I always console myself, however, on being thus misled, by the acquisition of additional knowledge of the topography of the country, to which such accidents always lead. From Arn-Prior, the residence of Mr. Ryrie, I pursued my journey for thirty miles to Narriga, the farm of Mr. Galbraith, who had invited me to accompany him in exploring the country for the purpose already mentioned. His farm is situated on the inland side of the coast range, and not more than twenty miles in a direct line from the sea. We examined a ford across the Shoalhaven river at Kallimundy, about eight miles from his farm, and over which it would be necessary to erect a bridge, in case a road should be formed. We found the stream rapid and the bottom greatly incommoded by some very large stones. On the following day we visited an opening in the coast range, abreast of Jervis Bay, through which we thought the road might be carried without much difficulty. About four miles from Mr. Galbraith's house we crossed the Endrick, a small stream which falls into the Shoalhaven, and soon after reached the Kloof, an opening in the mountains which has the appearance of being caused by some convulsion of nature.

We proceeded nearly 300 yards up the gorge, which was almost impassable, from the quantity of brushwood, and masses of friable sandstone, until we reached the table land of the range, where one of my companions had a fine view of the sea. The result of our inspection was a conviction of the facility with which a road might be formed here, and surprise that the convicts are not employed in a labour, that would be attended with such considerable benefit to the Colony.

If, instead of sending the irreclaimable convicts, by which I mean those malefactors who have undergone a colonial sentence, and are condemned a second time to banishment—if, instead of sending them to Norfolk Island, to expiate their crimes in unprofitable labour, they were to be employed at the remote points of the Colony in removing the great natural difficulties that arrest the progress of colonization, to what vast objects of utility might not that physical power, which is now lost to the Settlement, be employed. Lofty mountains and rapid streams divide the fertile lands from extensive regions that lie uncultivated beyond, and it requires but that those distant tracts shall be rendered accessible to the settler, in order that they may be reduced beneath the dominion of the plough. But such great designs cannot be accomplished by individuals: they demand the united efforts of organized bodies; and, as all the purposes proposed by Government in sentencing the convicts to Norfolk Island, would be attained by placing them at

those remote stations, where they could be made the instruments of real general benefit, it appears to me extraordinary that the obvious advantages of such a measure has not led to its adoption. If it were carried into effect, the expense of the transhipment of the convicts, which is very heavy, would be spared; besides the risk of losing vessels, which has sometimes occurred, when the convicts have availed themselves of favourable opportunities to seize them, would be avoided; while the same military force that now guards them at Norfolk Island would be sufficient for their surveillance elsewhere, and the main object of their banishment—their exclusion from all communication with their fellow-convicts—would still be secured.

Having remained a few days at Mr. Galbraith's, we set out on our expedition, being accompanied by Mr. Galbraith, Mr. W. Ryrie, a servant, and two of the natives as guides. About three miles from the farm we passed a waterfall, near which we commenced our ascent of the range, which threw many obstacles in our way, being steep, stony, and thickly wooded. My companions proceeded on foot, leading their horses, while I remained on horseback, being led by one of the guides. He was so occupied, however, in picking his own steps, that he frequently forgot me, and I was consequently consigned to the tender mercies of the branches by which we were surrounded, and by which I was at length carried off my horse, receiv-

ing some contusions by the fall. I could only congratulate myself that I was not left, like Absalom, in a state of suspension. Having reached the summit, our way became less difficult for two or three miles, but we were again interrupted by a deep muddy creek, on Yerock Flats, which we were unable to ford until we had proceeded in a southerly direction nearly to its source. Descending in an easterly direction, we bivouacked for the night on some very damp sandy ground, hobbled our horses, and left them to shift for themselves; and having kindled a fire, our native attendants made us some tea, after which we rolled ourselves up in blankets, with our saddles for pillows, and lay down for the night. The novelty of my situation kept me awake in spite of the fatigues of the day, and I was entertained till daybreak with a howling serenade from the wild native dogs. In the morning we resumed our journey, and passed through trackless and stony gullies, in which our way was greatly impeded by jungle, and creepers of an extraordinary size and length. Our blacks were totally unacquainted with this part of the route, and were so disconcerted by the difficulties which we had to encounter, that we were obliged to halt for the purpose of recruiting their spirits, as well as our own. On setting out again we had for a short space a level country, in which many cattle tracks were observed. This easy route, however, did not long continue, and we returned once more to our former laborious travelling,

which appeared to me at times to bear a very close resemblance to a steeple chase. We looked in vain for a herdsman's hut, in which we might repose for the night, and were obliged to content ourselves once more with the sky for our canopy. The place which we chose for our retreat was one of excessive wildness, surrounded by forests, caverns, dried up streams, and patches of land covered with fallen trees. Our situation was rendered the more comfortless, by the discovery that our tea and sugar bags had been torn from their fastenings by the branches of the trees. This loss, however, was of but slight importance, in comparison with that which we encountered on the following morning, when to our dismay, we discovered that all our horses had disappeared. Fortunately, after a weary search, we recovered them all but one, which we heard no more of during the remainder of our expedition. In the afternoon we resumed our journey under very unfavourable appearances, for the sky bore visible marks of an impending thunderstorm. Our fears were soon realized; the rain came down in torrents, and the thunder and lightning were of that awful grandeur, which none but those who have witnessed their effect in a tropical climate can well conceive. My companions gave way under the depressing effects produced by the storm, and all my efforts to induce them to push on, in hopes of finding some stockman's hut, were used in vain, notwithstanding our provisions were getting very

short, and we knew not when we should have an opportunity of replenishing them. We had not long remained debating, under the chilling influence of the wetting we had received, when our blacks entreated us to 'nangry' there, having discovered a cave which they said would afford us ample shelter. This information decided the dispirited set, and we descended a deep gully. On arriving at the cave we found it much more commodious than we expected. It was a natural gallery in the solid rock, about twenty-five yards long, and open at each extremity. Here we made a fire, and endeavoured to dry our clothes, but the smoke prevented our approaching it until the wood was reduced to embers. The natives more wisely kindled their fire on the outside, beneath an overhanging rock. When we had refreshed ourselves, we lay down to repose on our rocky couch, having left our horses to luxuriate on the fine grass in the gully. The next morning we proceeded for about an hour over a level tract of land, but were stopped at length by an immense gully, which we determined on descending, to avoid the circuitous route we must otherwise have taken. Our descent was very tedious, and occupied nearly two hours; it was further delayed by the chicanery of our guides, who frequently asked us to stop, under pretence of finding the way, while they amused themselves with cutting down the palm-trees, for the sake of the cabbage which grows on the top.

Soon after our departure from this gully, our journey assumed a new character, and presented difficulties of a different nature from those we had hitherto experienced. As we approached the shores of the coast, the country became very flat and boggy, occasionally overgrown with high rushes, and intersected with salt-water creeks. Our progress was suddenly checked by our horses sinking almost up to their middle in the marsh, and we were obliged to dismount among the rushes, which served to support us. Our people had great difficulty in extricating the horses, which they were enabled to effect by laying branches of trees on the ground to prevent themselves from sinking while they were occupied in the work. Having waded through this boggy tract, we succeeded at length in reaching the hut of some stock-keepers, belonging to Mr. M'Leay. After four days' wandering in the woods of New South Wales, we hailed this poor cabin with sincere satisfaction, though its inhabitants, our companions for the night, were two wretched outcasts from the mother-country. We were much indebted to them, however, for their hospitable and attentive behaviour, at a time when we were most capable of appreciating it, and were so pleased with their civility, that we asked them at parting whether we could render them any service in return. They with much modesty requested us to grant them two favours only, both of which were readily complied with. The

first was that we would give them a little tobacco, as they had been for some time smoking the leaves of the *Currajong* tree, which are used by the aborigines as a substitute for tobacco, being similar to it in texture, as well as possessing narcotic properties in a minor degree. The other favour was the gift of one of our three dogs, to protect their hut against the attacks of the natives.

About noon we made our way through the bush to the shore near Jervis Bay; soon after which we passed between two salt-water lakes and the sea. We continued our journey, partly along the beach, and crossed, a little before sunset, a large and rapid tide creek, named Narawalla, at no great distance from the sea. A number of natives, whom we found on the banks, cautioned us against crossing with our horses, and offered to take us over in their frail canoes, which we deemed a still more dangerous plan, and accordingly waited till near dark, when the water had abated sufficiently to permit our crossing. We proceeded thence to the farm of Mr. Kendall, who had sent us a very polite invitation. This gentleman had resided a long time in New Zealand, as a Missionary; he spoke the language of that country fluently, and had published a New Zealand grammar. His property principally consists of cedar, which he sends to the Sydney market, by a sailing boat. The finest cedar in the Colony has been found on the coast ranges, and many trees are met with which have fallen from

age, and when the decayed sap-wood has been removed, the heart-wood has been found in fine preservation, from two to five feet in diameter. In all the accessible parts, to the south of Sydney, it is fast disappearing. On leaving Mr. Kendall's farm, we had a gradual descent of five miles to the sea, at the end of which we reached a snug little harbour for small vessels, called by the natives Ulladolla. Four miles to the southward we crossed a very deep creek, in which the tide was running out so strong, that had our horses lost their footing, they must inevitably have been carried into the surf.

In the lakes and along the shore plenty of fish are to be had, those in the former, being almost entirely a species of fresh water mullet. The natives are usually very successful in fishing, in their light barks, and when they bring their prey on shore, they all assemble round a fire, and eat them half dressed from the embers, until they become so torpid from satiety, that they lie down and sleep. Twelve miles from the creek brought us to Mr. Morris' farm, at Mooramoorang. About half a mile from this part of the coast, there is a small island, where some rabbits had been placed, and with which it is now completely over-run. The only conveyance thither was a slight native canoe, made out of a single piece of bark; in which Mr. Galbraith ventured over and had some excellent sport. He observed many skeletons of rabbits, which he supposed had been seized by birds of prey.

In consequence of an accident that happened to Mr. Galbraith's mare, and which induced him to remain until she was able to travel, I resolved to push on, attended by a native guide. I accordingly proceeded on my journey, and travelled nearly sixteen miles through scrub, and forest land, until I arrived on the banks of the river Clyde, which falls into Bateman's Bay. Our course now lay parallel with the stream for about five miles, when we crossed the river, and resolved on passing the night on its right bank. As the rain was falling very heavily, we erected a gunyer, or native hut, of sticks and bark, which we collected near the spot. It was twelve feet long and six in height, and with a good fire in front, formed no bad protection from the inclemency of the weather. Being erected very near to the river, the latter, as it rose with the tide, approached so closely as to threaten the extinction of our fire; but, happily, it soon after began to recede. Numbers of fine fish, attracted by the light of our fire, were constantly springing out of the water, within a few yards of our hut; but our native guides were too lazy to spear them, which they might easily have done by keeping them between the fire and a canoe, that they could have taken from the beach. So long as the natives have enough to serve their present wants, they will not give themselves the trouble to increase their store, yet, it was rather tantalizing, though not actually in want of provisions, to hear a number of

large fish jumping about as if in defiance of our power.

We started the next morning at an early hour; and in passing a creek, the banks of which were rather steep, the ground gave way beneath my horse, and we were precipitated together into the stream; I did not, however, suffer any material injury from the accident. We proceeded this day a distance of twenty-five miles, over ground exceedingly rough and broken; and, as I was the only one mounted, my companions naturally complained of fatigue, and were desirous of resting for the night, in which determination I could not refuse to concur, though we were led to suppose that a settler's farm was to be found at no greater distance than three or four miles. We accordingly set about collecting firewood, as well as sticks and bark for a gunyer, after which my native guide rambled into the woods, and, from his facility in climbing trees, soon returned with a large squirrel, an opossum, and several fish, which he threw down before the man who was preparing our supper. This will shew what these people can do when they choose to exert themselves; for as both the opossum and squirrel leap frequently from tree to tree, it requires no little agility to capture them.

Early on the following morning we left our encampment on Nulligan Flats, and passed over a mountain of the same name; its height may be imagined from our having taken four hours to

reach its summit, during which we were often wet through, by repeated heavy showers. In descending, my horse was attacked by one of the most venomous serpents of the country, who raised himself in the grass and endeavoured to reach one of the animal's legs. He was immediately, however, dispatched by my companions. Soon after this, we passed the M'Leay River, which falls into Bateman's Bay, and is navigable, eight miles from the sea, for boats of fifteen tons burden; a great advantage to Mr. Thompson, whose farm is situated only four miles from the point of navigation; as the difficulty of passing the coast range renders the conveyance of goods to and from Sydney by land quite impracticable. From Mr. Thompson's I proceeded to the farm of Mr. Flannigan, situated near the southernmost boundary of the Colony, which terminates on the left bank of the Murroo. On my way, I was once more wet through in a thunderstorm, to which I had been exposed for several days without suffering any inconvenience, a fact which I am at a loss, whether to attribute to my health being strengthened by exposure, or to the peculiar salubrity of the climate. Mr. Flannigan had been a fashionable tailor in the town of Sydney, where it might be supposed he made more of his cabbage than he was likely to do in his farm, which was situated at least 200 miles from Sydney by land. There is a safe cove for small vessels about seven miles from the farm, but as no vessels come to this harbour, except ex-

pressly for produce, his profits must be considerably diminished by the expense of sending his goods to market. The distance, also, from any township in which there is a bench of magistrates, has the effect of rendering his servants quite unmanageable. The nearest town, Inverary, is about eighty miles distant, so that such of his servants as he may send thither are detained from their labour for upwards of a week, besides the overseer who usually accompanies them. This is one of the evils attending the possession of a grant in a remote situation.

It would seem that the great distance at which many of the settlers are from a bench of magistrates, is not the sole origin of the insolence and misconduct with which the convict-servants too often conduct themselves. When the settler does put himself to the expense and inconvenience of bringing an offender before a magistrate, the latter may sentence him to receive a number of lashes, but this punishment is frequently executed in such a manner as to negative its intended effects. If the magistrates were more attentive to the administration of punishment, it cannot be doubted that there would be less occasion for its infliction. So long as the assigned servants are kept under proper control, and in fear of a bench of magistrates, they perform their tasks well; but once removed by distance, or carelessness in the administration of

punishment, from wholesome coercion, they exhibit the same ungovernable passions for the indulgence of which they were sentenced to exile from their native country. To shew that the manner of inflicting punishment is often turned into a mere jest, I will give the following example :—a man is brought before the bench for breaking open his master's store, and stealing articles therefrom ; or, when he was appointed to watch the sheep, going to sleep, and suffering the native dogs to worry, disperse, and destroy some of them : for one of these, or similar offences, the magistrates sentence him to receive a certain number of lashes: but, instead of having this punishment inflicted in a proper and impressive manner, the offender is sent off to some retired spot, with a constable, followed by a jailor, or some other person, appointed as a flogger, both of them, perhaps, prisoners themselves; and it may be easily supposed, that, under such circumstances, the punishment becomes a mere matter of form, particularly if the culprit can afford to bribe the parties. In some cases, the prisoner has been seen walking away, laughing and talking with the constable and flogger, and, no doubt, indulging in many a joke at the expense of the inadequate administration of the laws under which he was condemned. In the army and navy, punishments are attended with great ceremony; and as many of the magistrates are officers in one or other of the services, why could not the punishment of

prisoners, be conducted in a similarly impressive manner. The choice of persons to fill the situation of magistrate, is one of the most responsible functions of the local Government, and it would be almost as well that there should be none at all, than that those who are appointed should act in a way calculated to bring their authority into contempt. The respectability, as well as the onerous nature of the situation, demands that the magistrate should, at least, maintain the dignity which is due to his office. In one instance, a magistrate so far forgot himself, as to act as a cattle driver, not merely assisting in driving his own herd, but one belonging to others, through an extent of country far exceeding 100 miles: associating with the servants who accompanied him, as a companion, rather than the master; being habited like them in a jacket and trowsers of Paramatta cloth, and otherwise conducting himself without any reference to his station. I was assured, by a respectable settler, that such was his appearance and conduct that he could not introduce him to his family, and the consequence was, that he passed the night in the same outbuilding as the servants. From the opportunities I have had of making observations on human nature, I am convinced that there are few persons who possess the happy tact of being able to associate with their inferiors, and yet continue to command the respect that is due to their rank in society.

Being anxious to pass the boundary line of the Colony, I rose early on the 6th of November, and proceeded to the River Murroo, but the tide was running so strong, that the horse with difficulty advanced against it. On gaining the opposite bank, I was obliged to turn back immediately, as the tide was running with such rapidity that the water was above my knees; however, I was much gratified with having accomplished this favourite intention. Bidding Mr. Flannigan farewell, I rejoined my friends at Mr. Thompson's about sunset. It was arranged that we should leave the coast two days after, for the purpose of ascending the mountains, and as I knew that would be a task of some difficulty, I proceeded ten miles in advance of my companions the night previously. I was attended by two native guides, and on arriving within a short distance of the mountain we prepared our encampment for the night, kindled a fire, and hobbling my horse, turned him out to graze on the fine pasture by which we were surrounded. On rising in the morning, I was much mortified to learn that my foresight was rendered unavailing, by the horse having strayed back to Mr. Thompson's farm. I was thus obliged to wait for my companions, who, brought him with them about the middle of the day. On reaching the summit of the range, which we took three hours and a half to accomplish, we found the ground very level, with a gentle declivity, for nearly twelve miles; but we were occasionally in-

commoded by bogs and creeks. We put up for the night at a hut occupied by some convict-servants, whose respectful attention, and the accommodation they afforded us after our fatigues and privations, rendered us truly grateful. Here a notorious individual, named Michael Power, also sought refuge for the night. He had a herd of cattle with him which he was about to drive to Nulligan Flats, where he purposed erecting a hut. He was a free man, and had on so many occasions testified a sneaking likeness for other people's cattle, tha the was generally called the *cattle fancier*. Whenever any stray cattle come within his reach, he is said to secure them immediately, by putting his brand upon them.

At sunrise we again set out, and proceeded to the farm of Captain M'Kellar, about six miles distant, from which we pursued our way to the abode of Mr. Ryrie, at Arn-Prior, where we passed the night. Here I took leave of my friend, Mr. Galbraith, to whom I am much indebted for his attention to my personal comforts during our late journey, in which no exertion or endurance was spared on our part, though, unfortunately, not attended with the utility which we had anticipated. We subsequently learnt, that many of the inconveniences which we suffered, might have been avoided, had we taken a northerly course on leaving Narriga. The line which we adopted on arriving at the creek, at Yerock Flats, was taken in

direct opposition to the advice of our guides, who strongly urged us to follow the ranges in a northerly direction; but one of our party, under an erroneous impression, had sufficient influence to prevail, and the consequence was, that we committed ourselves to an adventure much more romantic and perilous than we had any idea of when we started on our expedition. Had we taken the line recommended by our guides, we should have found a comparatively easy, and much shorter road to Jervis Bay, instead of being exposed to a variety of mishaps and *desagrêments* that cast no little gloom over our journey. On the 10th of November I left Arn-Prior, on my return to Lumley; and, after a diversified tour, through the wildest, and most civilized districts, I arrived safely at Sydney on Christmas Eve.

During the period I remained in the Australasian capital, my time was very agreeably varied by short excursions in the immediate neighbourhood; to Botany Bay, &c. &c. On one of these little journeys, I visited the monument which was erected in 1825, in the name of the French people, to the memory of La Perouse. I had already made two trips to Botany Bay, with a view to discover where this monument stood, but had each time failed. On the third occasion I was more fortunate. The route we took was different, and carried us for about three miles from the South Head road onwards towards Botany Bay, whence

we continued on the bush track about two miles farther, which brought us to the hut of a discharged veteran soldier, where a woman directed us to follow a dray track, leading direct to the monument, and thus we easily found the object of our search, which is situated about two miles within the north point of Botany Bay, and 200 yards from the beach. It is a plain pyramidical pillar, of a moderate height, with a French inscription on one side of the pedestal, translated into English on the other, setting forth that that place, which was visited by Monsieur de la Perouse, in 1788, was the last from whence any accounts of him had been received, and that the monument was erected in the name of France, by M. M. de Bougainville and Ducampier, commanding the frigate La Thetis, and the corvette L'Esperance, lying in Port Jackson. The foundation was laid in 1825, and it was completed in 1828.

Not very distant from this place, in a dell, surrounded by brushwood, there stands the tomb of a French Priest, who died in La Perouse's ship, marked with a brief and simple inscription recording his death, and that he had accompanied La Perouse in his voyage of circumnavigation. Some traveller, who visited this spot in 1824, probably an officer of the French corvette, Coquille, which was then lying at Port Jackson, inscribed the following lines on a gum-tree, in reference to the French Priest's tomb.

"Pres de cet arbre reposent les restes du O. Le Receveur. Visité en Mars 1824."

About a quarter of a mile from the monument there is a small look-out tower, built on a rising ground, which is intended to be occupied by a Custom-house officer and a boat's crew, to prevent smuggling transactions.

On the south side of Botany Bay, the spot where the celebrated Cook first landed on his arrival at these shores, there is affixed a brazen tablet against a rock, bearing the following inscription.

"Under the auspices of British Science, these shores were discovered A.D. MDCCLXX. by James Cook and Joseph Banks, the Columbus and Mæcenas of their time; this spot once saw them ardent in the pursuit of knowledge. Now to their memory this tablet is inscribed, in the first year of the Philosophical Society of Australasia. Sir Thomas Brisbane, K.C.B., &c., President. A.D., MDCCCXXII."

It does not reflect much credit on the sentiment or good taste of the people, that these monuments are not more noticed by them. Of fifty respectable individuals of whom I inquired on the subject, I did not meet one who was aware of the existence of the French Priest's tomb, although it might be supposed that they would have felt sufficient interest in the early history of the Colony to induce them to explore the shores, and every part of the immediate vicinity of Botany Bay; a name which must be for ever associated with that of the immortal Cook, and his scientific companions, the celebrated

Sir Joseph Banks, and Dr. Solander, whose names are individually commemorated in different parts of this district: the great Navigator's name being given to a river that falls into the bay, and those of his friends to the two headlands at its entrance. I trust that the Colonists will, one day or another, erect a solid monument, worthy of the memory of the man who discovered the land which they inhabit, and rescue themselves from the imputation of insensibility, or indifference to a subject that claims their most anxious regard.

There have been so many works, of a practical and scientific nature, published on the subject of the soil and climate of New South Wales, that any observations of mine would be justly considered superfluous. I believe the chief peculiarities of both are now very well understood by all classes to whom such information can be productive of any utility; a few general remarks, therefore, are all that will be required at my hands.

The eastern coast of Australasia is guarded by a chain of hills, between which and the sea there is a zone of land, averaging about fifty miles in breadth. In some places on these ranges the hills rise to a height of between two and three thousand feet, and as they are broken by interruptions that form deep gullies and chasms, the traveller's path across, in consequence of the winding and circuitous course he is compelled to take, in order to avoid these yawning spaces, is not less than fifty miles,

although the direct line, if it could be taken, would scarcely exceed thirty. This barrier consists of sandstone, freestone, and porphyry; presenting occasional patches of grass, and stunted timber of the gum species. There is just sufficient moisture and vegetation throughout the range to afford sustenance to animals proceeding to or from the interior. For several miles beyond the range, the character of the soil is sandy, and bears an herbage of scanty growth and inferior quality. Advancing onwards towards Bathurst, the soil improves but very slightly, while the surface takes a more undulating and diversified aspect; but on arriving near the Macquarie river and the settlement in that quarter, a vast change is perceptible. The soil here is a rich friable loam, affording ample pasturage to numberless flocks and herds, while the river flowing through the fertile and open country, where there is but little wood to waste the resources of the earth, presents a luxuriant picture, which is very gratifying after the poor tracks through which this prosperous settlement is reached.

In that part of the occupied country which lies between the Blue Mountains and the sea, granite, porphyry, and sandstone prevail, with the exception of the land south-west of Sydney, which consists for the most part of unproductive clays. It is to be remarked generally, of New South Wales, that nature has provided principles of fertility, exactly the reverse of those which ob-

servation has discovered to regulate the vegetable world in Europe. Here we find that the soil at the mouths of rivers is usually of the richest description; while in New South Wales, the country at such points, and for a considerable distance beyond, is generally low, sandy, marshy, and of the poorest and most unproductive kind. The same observation will apply to the gradation of vegetable fertility on the hills. In England, fertility diminishes as we ascend the height, but in New South Wales, the summit is the most luxuriant part, exhibiting crops of the sweetest, and most flourishing herbage. It is to be remarked also, that a few miles from those points in the rivers where the influence of the salt water terminates, the small hills, and the land generally, in the neighbourhood, exhibit some of the richest soil in the country. But the soil every where fluctuates, and great irregularities are perceptible, for which it has been found difficult to assign any satisfactory reason. Mr. Dawson's book on Australasia, which I have cousulted, appears to me to furnish on the whole the clearest and most correct account I have met with amongst the numerous works that profess to enter elaborately into the subject.

During my residence in New South Wales, I was thrown very much amongst the aborigines, about whom so many contradictory descriptions have been written, and as, in the course of my rambles, I passed from tribe to tribe, my opportu-

nities of arriving at some conclusions respecting their character, and the possibility of civilizing them, were at least sufficiently numerous. It appeared to me that they have, on the whole, been misrepresented. I do not think they deserve to be classed as the *last* link in the long chain of humanity, because they are certainly far superior in intelligence to the aborigines of Van Diemen's Land. True it is, they have no idea of a Supreme Being, nor do they seem to be grateful for any efforts that are made to reclaim them from their savage habits; but they still appear to possess tractable qualities, which, if properly educated, might yet render them capable of taking a more elevated place in the scale of mankind. They are very indifferent to all the resources and comforts of civilized life. They seldom care to erect regular gunyers; but are content to lie down to rest any where, generally near some stream, or water-hole, where they light their fires. If it should happen to rain, or if a cold wind arise, they seek shelter in the caves, or under the largest trees. They seem to make no distinctions in the description of food they use: rats and serpents, grubs and kangaroos, are to them quite as acceptable as the most delicate flesh. All they desire is to satisfy the cravings of hunger. The animal nature is paramount throughout. They are perfectly indifferent to the acquisition of knowledge of any kind, and do not care, even when opportunities are offered to them, to

cultivate the useful and mechanical arts by which they could so considerably improve their situation. Their ideas do not seem to extend beyond the common labours of drawing water, cutting wood, and looking after cattle; nor have they any affection for particular places or persons, but on the contrary seem to become uneasy if they remain long in any one place, or with any particular persons; although each tribe has a certain district in which its families principally reside, when they pause in the midst of their wanderings. A strong instance of their tenacious clinging to their ancient habits is given in the case of Benelong, the first native who was introduced to the table of the first Governor of New South Wales. When Governor Phillip returned to England in 1792, he took Benelong with him, but after residing three years in London, he returned to the Colony with Governor Hunter. For some time he continued to wear the Windsor uniform, and to frequent the Governor's table, but at last, growing wearied of the formalities of civilized life, he threw off his European dress, and plunging once more into the bush, he seldom appeared again amongst the English residents, and then only to indulge in a debauch.

It is asserted that there are no appointed chiefs at the head of the tribes and, that, if there be any form of government amongst them, it is a rude sort of democracy, where a few of the elder and some of the more active and intelligent men have, by

common consent and acquiescence, the control of the whole. When we first took possession of the Colony, however, there were two tribes, called the Botany Bay, and Sydney tribes, that recognised something like the monarchical principle in their government; for they were separately ruled by a chief, who was acknowledged by them as sovereign. Bungaree, the last chief of the Sydney tribe, a good-natured and rather intelligent man, resided on the north side of Sydney Harbour, in a palace about five feet square. He received no regular revenue from his subjects, but scorning to beg, the last resource of mendicity, he emulated the example of more polished society, and levied contributions from his friends in the shape of loans, which he never repaid, for the support of himself and his suite. A short time before his death he was conveyed, by order of the Governor, to the General Hospital, where suitable attention was paid to the last representative of the royalty of the sable race of Sydney; but his Majesty feeling his dignity, perhaps, compromised by his position, was, at the earnest entreaty of his subjects, removed to the house of the Rev. Mr. Therry, a Roman Catholic clergyman. There he was treated with the greatest care and kindness; but his friends taking advantage of the absence of his host, carried him off to a place in the neighbourhood of Elizabeth Bay, where the royal patient expired. He bequeathed his dominions to his eldest son, but de-

bauchery and debased habits sunk the pretensions of the heir-apparent, and by this time the last trace of the royal line has probably passed away for ever.

The names of the natives are taken from the animals, or other natural productions, by which they are surrounded: but they exhibit considerable pleasure when their European friends give them new, and, to them, unaccustomed titles. It is a peculiarity amongst them that when any one member of a tribe dies, all the rest of the same name immediately change it, and it is never after allowed to be mentioned. Another peculiarity is in the mode of testifying their mourning for the deceased. They daub and plaster their heads and bodies over with white earth, and scarify their heads until the blood trickles down their faces, which, as they permit it to dry on the surface, gives them a very strange and hideous appearance. The men invariably wear their hair long, while that of the women is cut short: thus reversing the fashion of Europe.

I was informed by Mr. Yeoman, of Maitland, that he had observed the natives on Liverpool Plains make use of a sort of telegraph, by means of columns of smoke, which they produced from their fires, by placing over them a long piece of bark through which the smoke ascended as through a funnel. The frequency of the repetition, and the length of time each was continued, appeared to regulate the intelligence conveyed by the telegraph.

Great diversity of opinion prevails respecting the first occupants of New Holland, but, after investigating all the statements I have heard and read respecting them, I have come to this conclusion, that it is most probable the island, or continent, was originally peopled in the N. W. by Malays from the eastern islands, and in the N. E. by negroes from New Guinea; and that the latter preceded the former, but from the inferiority of their numbers were driven from place to place until they reached the southern extremity, from whence they fled to the islands in Bass's Straits, and ultimately to Van Diemen's Land. This is the only way I can account for the inhabitants of that island being woolly-haired, with a negro cast of countenance, while those of New South Wales have universally long black hair, with Malay features.

The language of the aborigines has some peculiarities, which bear a strong affinity to the Russian, as it is described in the article Philology, in the Encyclopædia Britannica. Mr. Threlkeld told me that it has two nominative cases, or a nominative and an instrumental case. The declension of the nouns are seven or eight, governed by the last syllables of the nouns and not by gender. Adjectives are under the same regimen. Nouns and pronouns have the nominative, the instrumental, the genitive, the dative, the accusative, the vocative, and the ablative, which last never expresses

instrumentality: having no passive verb, necessarily creates the instrumental one. "*Me is beat,*" would be the expression for *I am beaten;* and "*it was he who beat me,*" would be the equivalent for *I was beaten by him:* the phrase "*it is he who*" being expressed with the relative *who*, &c. &c.

The women, as we usually find them in savage life, are the slaves rather than the companions of the men; and amongst those tribes that are not acquainted with whites, the females are kept completely out of sight, as they are by the inhabitants of the South Sea Islands. The natives are greatly terrified by the sight of a person in a mask, calling him "devil" or *Yah-hoo*, which signifies 'evil spirit:' and they are, like most uneducated people, greatly afraid of death. In their intercourse with the whites—I speak chiefly of the demi-civilized—they appear in general to be free from all restraint, and much good feeling subsists between both parties, the natives visiting the huts unceremoniously, and waiting till they are dismissed with food. If it were not for the illicit intercourse which is maintained by the whites with the native women, there would be but little ground for censure or animadversion, with the exception of the petty thefts which the blacks commit in the locations of the settlers, the natural and inevitable consequence of being brought into a communion, which, affording them but a scanty subsistence procured by begging, exposes them to all the vices of civilization,

without any of its benefits. In this intercourse the natives are certainly the sufferers, as they acquire habits of laziness that unfit them for the fatigues of their forest life; and they become, by degrees, enervated and dispirited. It is to be observed also, that the class of persons with whom they are thus brought into association, are amongst the most depraved of the white population.

The natives are very useful in giving information to the mounted Police concerning the bush-rangers, whom they call croppies. They also frequently go out with exploring parties to track them, receiving, as rewards for their services, old clothes, pipes, blankets, and tobacco; besides being fed on the way. Their acuteness in tracking the foot-steps of both men and wild animals in the bush is very remarkable; for instance, in the former case, they have pointed out the spots where bush-rangers have taken off their shoes, and even where they have passed over bare rocks with their naked feet; distinguishing the foot-prints by particles of dust that were imperceptible to the eyes of Europeans. In tracing them across a stream, where the bush-rangers have endeavoured to mislead and deceive their pursuers, by going some distance up or down before they left the water, the natives carefully track the banks on each side, until they discover the place where the run-aways came out.

Amongst a people with such evident capabilities of improvement, and who, by a judicious system of

management, might easily be reduced within the pale of colonial utility, it must be admitted, even by those who do not favour the principles of emigration upon a large scale, that colonization could be conducted with great advantages, not only to the natives of New Holland, but to those Europeans whose fortunes lead them from their native country into distant speculations of this description. We have already seen that New South Wales, although its soil varies in fertility, and presents alternations of luxuriance and barrenness, is yet in some places exceedingly productive; and enough has been shewn in the different publications that have issued from the press on this interesting subject, to prove that it is susceptible of yielding flattering results to the hand of industry. But I am far from recommending on this account that any one, dissatisfied with his own country, should risk his prospects in a venture, the success of which depends quite as much on his own energies, as it does upon the resources of the country in which he chooses to make the serious experiment of a *new life*. It should never be forgotten, that the most fertile land blossoms in vain for idleness and incapacity; and that the lavish bounties of Nature, however rich and inexhaustible, are as seed cast upon the winds, if man does not bring to them all the agencies of knowledge, skill, activity, and prudence. This is really the source of half the evils that have hitherto attended emigration; and when

the disappointed settler in Canada, or Australasia, complained bitterly of the disasters that turned his smiling hopes into tears of withering despair, he too often forgot also to state how much the weeds that sprung up in the track of his ploughshare were encouraged by the want of thrift, experience, and foresight in himself.

There are three main elements which enter into the question, and which ought never to be lost sight of by the emigrant, or by those who, at any period, contemplate taking a share in the labours of colonization. The first is the fitness of the settler to undertake the arduous task that lies before him; the second, the means of meeting all its unavoidable demands; and the third, the choice of a good situation.

Of the first, it is hardly necessary to observe, that it is essential to the emigrant that he should thoroughly understand the principles of agriculture; that he should be well acquainted with all the arts that can be employed in the recovery of worked lands, and in the deriving from available soils, the utmost possible profit at the smallest possible outlay: that he should, also, inform himself accurately upon the character of the surface on which he proposes to settle; the influence of the climate upon productions; and the description of culture that is likely to be most successful, and most marketable; that his previous habits should particularly adapt him for the toils of his undertaking;

that he should be physically strong, and of a bold and enduring constitution; and, above all, that his mind should be elastic, capable of patient submission to whatever circumstances may arise, and not easily turned aside by sudden reverses, or unexpected misfortunes. These requisites are frequently overlooked; and hence it is that many men, who never should have attempted the trying ordeal, are found to murmur, when they discover the dark forest, and the remote 'prairie', do not yield the glories of an 'El Dorado.'

The second element is capital. What can the emigrant—I confine myself, of course, to the class of farmers—expect to reap from any agricultural speculation, especially when there are confessedly great difficulties to be overcome, without means? A farmer who emigrates with a very small sum, and who anticipates that it will become converted into a fortune when he reaches his destination, will find, to his sorrow, that, like the apple on the Dead Sea shore, it will too often turn to ashes instead of gold. Of course, the capital requisite for the emigrant, must be governed by the expectations to which his views are directed; but it may be assumed as a general rule, that a farmer who emigrates in the hope of acquiring a moderate independence in the course of years, and after some years, too, of privation and hardship, ought, at least, to be provided with a clear sum of between 500*l.* and 1000*l.*

The importance of a location is so obvious, and has been, unfortunately, so clearly demonstrated in the case of the first settlers at Swan River,—who, by the way, owe as much of their misfortunes to their own thoughtlessness, as to any other cause —that it is needless to enlarge upon the necessity of making the most accurate and careful inquiries, not only as to the actual character of the chosen spot, but of that of its immediate neighbourhood; its means of communication with other districts; and its position, in reference to the ultimate market to which its produce is to be conveyed. These are points which all experience has shewn to be so essential, that, were it not necessary to allude to them, in order to make any remarks upon emigration complete, it would not be needful to press them upon attention. If emigration be carried forward with a strict reference to these elementary conditions, it can hardly fail to reward, to a very great extent, the pains and penalties that are attached to it, even under the most prosperous circumstances; but, if it be not, then the miseries that follow, are fairly chargeable upon the folly and false ambition of the emigrant himself.

CHAP. XIV.

Departure for England—New Zealand—Description of the Island—Habits of the Natives—Passing the Meridian—Frolics of a Whale—Ice-islands—Doubling Cape Horn—Bahia—Dr. and Mrs. Dundas—Flores—A Party visit the Island—Ship disappears—Consternation and Disappointment occasioned thereby—Re-appearance of the Ship—Party embark—A brief Account of the Inhabitants of Flores and Corvo—Author's pecuniary arrangements—Arrival in England—L'Envoi.

After a residence in Sydney, which I shall always look back upon with pleasure, and having visited, as I have indicated in the preceding chapter, all the points of interest in the country, I took leave of my friends there on the 30th of March, 1832, and sailed for England in the Strathfieldsaye, passing round the north-end of New Zealand on the 9th of April, and taking our departure from the East Cape on the 12th of April.

Aware of the interest which all the accounts of the New Zealanders that have been hitherto published have excited, and being also desirous to satisfy my own mind on the disputed question, whether the savages of that island are really cannibals, as most travellers have represented them to be, or merely cruel pirates whose deeds of blood earned them a worse character than they really deserved, I availed myself

of every opportunity that offered, while in New South Wales, for making inquiries on the subject, amongst such of my friends as possessed the means of affording conclusive testimony to the facts, and I am happy to be enabled to lay before my readers a short sketch of the island and its inhabitants, which I have drawn up from rough notes that were furnished to me by a gentleman who commanded a vessel belonging to Sydney, and who collected the substance of the following information, while he was trading amongst the natives in different parts of the island.

"New Zealand is in general mountainous, and thickly wooded; the soil, on the declivities of the hills, being composed of strong loam mixed with stones, in which the natives plant their potatoes in the month of October. The low lands and banks of the river are covered with flax, and a species of wild cabbage and turnip are met with in the valleys, which abound with fresh water. The only fruit I have seen is the Ga-ga-ya, or Bamboo fruit, the flavour of which is delicious. The natives are an exceedingly fine race of men, and, if properly fed, would, I have no doubt, be the largest and best made men in the world. The mountainous nature of the country obliges them to divide themselves into small settlements, which lie scattered along the coasts, and on the side of every stream low huts are erected. Their districts contain from 200 to 1000 persons, under the advice rather than

the control of a chief, and in time of war they unite under the authority of the three principal chiefs Echo, Robulla, and Tuné (wild man). Echo is the first in rank. He is the son of the late chief Pay-he, who had visited England, France, America, and New South Wales, and endeavoured to promote a friendly intercourse between his people and strangers. Echo's personal appearance is very prepossessing; he is tall and well made, of a graceful carriage, has the finest face I think I ever saw, and his hair which curls gracefully over his shoulders is ornamented with a single feather which proclaims his rank. His mind, however, is of another complexion, cowardice, cunning, cruelty, and treachery being its principal characteristics. He visits every strange vessel that arrives, for the purpose of stealing whatever he can lay his hands on, in which object he is so ably assisted, that a vessel has scarcely been an hour at anchor, before she is stripped of almost every moveable article. The language of the eyes is, with much adroitness, made an auxiliary in their nefarious proceedings.

"Robulla differs in little from Echo, save the possession of superior courage.

"Tuné is completely the wild savage; undisguised and cruel, he delights in human flesh, but is not addicted to thieving. The New Zealand chiefs frequently visit Sydney, notwithstanding which the example of civilized society makes but little impression on them.

"In the year 1828, Pay-he and Robulla proceeded with a force of 600 men, to attack their countrymen in Blind Bay, who had savagely murdered the captain and seven sailors belonging to the schooner Samuel, of Sydney. Three of the latter only had escaped, the rest were devoured by their murderers. Pay-he exterminated all the natives he could find at Blind Bay, and returned to Entry Island, but soon after repaired to Queen Charlotte's Sound, for the purpose of revenging the death of the Warspite's crew which had taken place in a similar manner. On his way, he fell in with Myranue, chief of the Middle Isle, but refrained from injuring him or his people, as he had given shelter to foreign ships and white men. He remained with him a few days for the purpose of traffic, however he fell a victim to his treachery at an entertainment given by him. Thus perished Pay-he, the most faithful advocate for intercourse with the whites. Soon after my arrival at Entry Island, Robulla requested me to carry himself and twenty warriors to Banks' Island to get Myranue into their power, and if successful, he promised to load my vessel twice with flax, without any charge. Not being willing to place so much authority in his hands as his embarking so many followers would give him, I offered to take him and two of his best men to Banks' Island, a proposition which he did not think proper to accept. He entered into an agreement, however, with Captain

Stewart, of the brig Elizabeth, in which he left Entry Island on the 29th of October, 1830, with the chief Echo, and a retinue of 120 men. On the arrival of the Elizabeth at Wangaroo, or Banks' Harbour, the natives all remained below, and several canoes came off to the ship, but returned on finding her armed with guns. Myranue did not venture on board for some days; but gave the trading-master to understand that two double-barrelled guns must be paid for permission to anchor and trade, adding, that there was "no gammon" in him, an expression which the natives have acquired from the English run-away convicts. A man was accordingly sent on shore with the articles demanded, when Myranue came on board, upon which Echo sprang on deck, and seizing him by the hair of his head, exclaimed, "Myranue, you are my slave!" He was instantly secured, and Echo landed in the night with twenty-five men, another chief disembarking at the same time with his followers on the opposite side of the bay. They met towards morning near the centre of the bay, having put to death all who had come in their way, and burned the huts of the settlement as they passed along. Morning brought with it a dreadful spectacle; the bodies of men, women, and children scattered on the sand, bathed in blood, and many of them mangled and prepared for the steam-oven. The following day was passed in cutting up and cooking the bodies of their victims, which were

destined as provisions during the voyage to Entry Island. The heads, which they invariably carry with them to battle, are preserved by baking on hot stones, the internal portion having first been removed; the application of oil from time to time preserves their natural appearance, and prevents decay.

"On the 11th of November the Elizabeth returned, with Myranue, his wife, and fifty prisoners. When the warriors landed after this successful expedition, I was much surprised to find but little expression of satisfaction or welcoming from the rest of the natives. On the arrival of Echo at his settlement he was surrounded by his followers, who commenced a war dance, which consisted in jumping as high as they were able, and making a hideous noise, holding up at the same time their instruments of war, and the heads of their enemies. Their naked copper-coloured bodies, tattooed faces, and long matted hair, gave them a horrid appearance. After a sham fight they dispersed in troops to their respective settlements. A feast was immediately prepared by Echo, consisting of 100 baskets of potatoes, cumoras, and greens; about four hundred weight of whale-oil, some pieces of blubber, and several baskets of human flesh, which they had brought ashore from the Elizabeth. An old grey-headed man, a relation of Myranue's, was to be killed and eaten at this banquet. I found him sitting in the midst of the women, who were using every means to torment him, pulling out the

hairs of his head and beard by the roots, and accusing him of having killed and eaten their former chief Pay-he. "Now we will drink your blood and eat your flesh," said one of these delicate creatures; I endeavoured in vain to avert his fate; he was sent away with some other prisoners to be slaughtered. I found a boy, about five years of age, who was also related to Myranue, in the possession of Tuné; he too was to be sacrificed. I went in search of Echo, in hopes of obtaining his influence in my attempt to save him. Tuné followed, and offered to give him up for a cask of powder, but I at length obtained him in exchange for a musket, and have ever since had him under my protection.

"The instances of native barbarity which came under my notice were numerous. My attention was one day attracted by two lads, about seventeen years of age, one armed with a small axe, and the other with a gun with a fixed bayonet. They said they were in pursuit of two female slaves who had absented themselves, and on my asking them what it was their intention to do with them when found, their reply was, "Kill them, to be sure." I endeavoured to reason with them on the cruelty of such a punishment for so trifling an offence, but to no purpose. I then told them that if they produced the slaves alive and well, and would desist from punishing them, I would give them more than they were worth.

This was agreed to, and they were accordingly produced the next day; when a canister of powder, a few fish-hooks, and some tobacco, settled the affair.

"The New Zealanders believe in a God, a devil and a ghost. In 1829 they were greatly alarmed respecting their God (Tananana) whom one of them said he saw flying over Caffara towards Cape Egremont, to which place it is now believed that he has removed from his ancient residence at the North Cape. They have priests, whose duty it is to predict for them, like the augurs of the Romans. They are supposed to possess the power of charming and cursing whom they please; and the natives are so superstitious that they seldom survive their anathemas. I one day saw a girl whom they call a witch, and who, they say, can charm to death. She is certainly in one respect calculated to *charm*, being by far the finest girl I have seen in New Zealand. A wife, immediately after marriage is tabooed or made sacred, from which time her inconstancy is either punished by death, or otherwise, according to the option of her husband. A man may also taboo his house and property, which enables him to take the life of a trespasser. Their manner of disposing of the dead varies according to their station. The poorest classes are always burnt; the slaves are either thrown on the beach for the dogs, or deposited in a cave or under a rock. The remains of children are placed in a trough and covered with mats; the trough is fixed

on the top of a post, about six feet high, near the hut, on which it remains until its contents moulder away. The body of a chief is placed in an upright piece of timber, hollowed out for the purpose and painted with red earth. It is invariably stationed near his late residence, which is tabooed, never to be entered again. The female relatives meet periodically at the tomb, and amidst the most hideous lamentations they inflict wounds on various parts of their bodies, with pieces of shell, glass, or fishes' teeth. There is not a woman in New Zealand who is not scarred in the face, arms, and body; these wounds being often inflicted for joy as well as grief. The women frequently exchange their children, and nurse those which they adopt with great care. They are also often seen to suckle puppies and young seals."

I am free to admit that this account of the habits of the New Zealanders is so revolting as to appear incredible. We, who live under just laws, who enjoy the advantages of paternal and protective legislation, who hold the domestic affections sacred, and in whom the noblest attributes of the intellectual nature are sedulously cultivated by a rigid system of practical education, can hardly conceive that there should exist even in the remotest dens of savage life, a race of human beings capable of the horrors which I have here related. Yet incredulous as we may be, and unwilling to believe in the existence of such atrocities, they are nevertheless

true. The gentleman from whom I derived my information confirmed, in many conversations, and by reference to several living witnesses, the accuracy of a statement, which, if the interests of civilization were not concerned in its publication, I would gladly omit from the pages of my travels.

On the following day, after losing sight of New Zealand, we passed the meridian of 180° of East Longitude from Greenwich, and were consequently within twelve hours of Greenwich time in the Western Hemisphere. It appears to me that the proper time for changing the day in circumnavigating the globe, is that on which the meridian is passed from either side, a rule which if it were correctly observed by all captains of vessels, would be productive of the most useful results, by saving much of the confusion that so often arises from a variance in the notation of time. We had a great deal of discussion on board the Strathfieldsaye on this point, the Captain not wishing to change the day until he had reached some port, for which obstinate resolution he could not assign any better reason than that he had always done so on his former voyages. It was in vain to point out to him that every vessel we should meet with, coming from the eastward, would be keeping Greenwich time, and would consequently exhibit a difference in its log-book from us: besides that such an error might prove of serious importance in any point of law. A remarkable illustra-

tion of the confusion produced by a similar course of error is mentioned by Messrs. Tyerman and Bennet, in their journal at the Society Islands, in consequence of the captain of the first missionary ship, who passed round the Cape of Good Hope, whereby he gained a day, not making any change when crossing the meridian. Messrs. Tyerman and Bennet say, they "went to rest on Friday night, and did not awake until Sunday morning, although the interval for sleep did not exceed the usual term of repose."

Our homeward voyage was not marked by any incidents worth recording, with the exception of a curious one that occurred on the evening of the 6th of May, when we discovered a large black whale close under the lee side of the ship; so close, indeed, that there was no doubt but that part of the fish was in actual contact with the bottom of the vessel, the principal dorsal fin being nearly within reach of a person in the main channels. The officers of the ship were not a little uneasy about the rudder, which the whale frequently struck with his tail, as well as the counter of the ship. Had he broken the rudder our situation would have been rendered exceedingly perilous, but fortunately he appeared to be in a very playful humour, as he left us several times, swam off a short distance, and returned again, until a few musket balls were lodged in his huge body, when he suddenly disappeared altogether.

On the 27th of April, in Lat. 54° ½ s. we passed several floating islands of ice, and on the 14th of May doubled Cape Horn. This was formerly considered a very wonderful undertaking, and even, at the present time, is not destitute of interest, I might, perhaps, add danger, for like the southern extremity of the African Continent, it cannot be passed at any season of the year without the chance of experiencing one of those awful storms that are peculiar to their respective positions, and to which even the oldest sailors used to look forward with apprehension. Experience, however, and observation have made us better acquainted with the prevailing winds and currents in those stormy latitudes, while the superior equipment of modern vessels, and our great advancement in the science of navigation, both from practical and theoretical knowledge, enables us now to make the voyage round the extreme points of these continents with comparative ease and security.

We were now ten weeks on our passage, and it was a little remarkable that throughout the whole of that time we never saw a sail upon the wide expanse of sea. The first vessel we spoke was the American ship, St. Peter, on the 7th June, fifty-seven days from New Norfolk, U. S. bound to Valparaiso.

On the 15th of June we cast anchor in the harbour of Bahia. This place, which is important to the Brazils on account of the great extent of its

trade, is one of the most celebrated ports in South America, for carrying on the slave trade with the coast of Africa. We visited the town immediately after our arrival, and were struck with its size, which is very considerable, embracing two parts, the higher and lower, the latter of which is more remarkable for noise, dirt, and confusion, than for cleanliness and order. The street, called Constitution Hill, is so steep and irregular that it is inaccessible to carriages, but the pedestrian, who will speedily become wearied by the fatigue of traversing the crowded and filthy avenues of this Babylon of the New World, will find a cheap relief in the chairs which are in use here, if he do not object to being carried about from place to place by two stout negroes, in a machine that is not of the most elegant construction. We found the population in a state of great excitement, arising from the political events that were then going forward at Rio de Janeiro. The people were divided between their attachment to the old Government, and the desire to achieve their independence. They were separated into two parties, which might be designated the Monarchical, consisting of all those who wished to maintain the connection with the Brazilian government, under which the prosperity of the province had hitherto progressed with such rapidity; and the Democratic, which was, of course, composed of all those who, having nothing to lose, were naturally desirous of any convulsion which, in the chapter of accidents,

might turn up advantageous for themselves. This latter party was numerically the stronger, counting under its banners all the free people of colour, and all the slaves, who naturally fostered the principles of revolution in the hope of securing something in the confusion.

During the few days we remained at Bahia, I visited the opera, which was entirely performed by blacks, with the exception of the *Prima Donna*, who was an actress that had already passed the grand climacteric of her powers. The whole performance, including that of the orchestra, was as indifferent as ever a critic, accustomed to La Scala itself, could well imagine it to have been.

A circumstance occurred while I was here, which was to me of much greater interest than either the politics or the trade of Bahia, and which, I am confident, will be equally interesting to such of my readers as may recollect the details of my visit to St. Jago, related in the first volume of these travels. After I left St. Jago, it will be remembered, that both the Consul and his wife were carrid off by fever, leaving the sister of the former, an amiable and accomplished lady, dangerously ill of the same disease, and attended only by such of the Portuguese as were humane enough to feel any commiseration for her situation. After a severe struggle with her illness, she, at length, happily recovered, and, embarking in a small French schooner, she was obliged to make a voyage to

Bahia, in the hope of procuring from thence a passage to England. She was still in a very delicate state of health, which was not improved by her voyage, and on reaching Bahia, she found herself so ill that she was obliged to call in medical aid. Fortunately for her, as well as the English residents at that place, Dr. Dundas, a very skilful and gentlemanly man, had settled there as a medical practitioner, and his services were, upon this interesting occasion, of the utmost benefit to the fair invalid. During his professional attendance upon the lady, however, he became so charmed with her intellectual and personal attractions, that, when her health was re-established, and she was preparing for her departure, he found it impossible to tear himself from her presence. The influence of her society was irresistible; and, as she was on the eve of taking leave of Bahia, he solicited her hand in marriage. The delicacy and constancy of his attentions to her, it may be presumed, made a strong impression on her feelings, and his proposals were accordingly received with favour. She consented to reward his devotion with that happiness which it was in her power alone to confer, and, after the preliminaries were arranged, it was finally determined that she should proceed to England in the packet, and that he should rejoin her as soon as his affairs would permit. In the mean time, he sent to England for a medical man to come out and take his practice, until it was convenient

for him to return with his bride. It was some time after these incidents had occurred, that I was most agreeably surprised to meet them both in Bahia, with an infant daughter, and in the full enjoyment of the most perfect domestic happiness. The hours I spent with them during my short stay in that part of the world, I reckon amongst the pleasantest in my life; for they presented to me a picture of such complete felicity, attained after scenes of the most trying calamity, as to appear, at this distance of time, more like a dream than a story of real life.

We left Bahia on the 21st of June, and arrived at Flores on the 13th of August. The Captain of our vessel did not anchor, for the double reason of saving trouble, and escaping from the payment of the port dues; but he afterwards discovered that the authorities at Santa Cruz had made a regulation which rendered this precaution useless, and by which they would not permit any vessel to receive a supply of provisions, which, in our case, was absolutely necessary, until the port dues had first been discharged. Greatly to the Captain's mortification, also, he found that, because he had come from a port south of the equinoctial line, he had to pay double the amount of those who were from any port in the northern hemisphere. There were also two English schooners standing off and on the shore for a similar reason.

The Captain went on shore to purchase stock, and

was accompanied by Captain de Saumarez, R.N., Mr. Ross, surgeon, R.N., and myself. A Mr. M'Kay, agent to the Consul General of the Azores, offered his services to procure whatever we required, and we went to his house, where we were very hospitably received. Here we were quickly surrounded by groups of people laden with provisions of all descriptions, and while the bargaining was going forward, I availed myself of the opportunity to visit a Franciscan Monastery, which is the only religious establishment on the island. It contained thirteen resident priests, and for a place of so little trade and consequence, might be considered a respectable building. But it did not exhibit any features of interest, except a silver lamp in the chapel, which, I was informed, was kept continually burning.

When the purchases were completed, our stock was embarked partly in our own boat, and partly in a boat hired for the occasion, but the weather wore so threatening an aspect, that the people we had engaged, peremptorily refused to tempt the sea that night, although the Captain promised them a much larger reward than he had at first agreed to give them. I could not but consider the resolution of the boatmen a very prudent one, as it certainly would have been dangerous to put to sea on a dark squally night in two deeply-laden boats, to look for a ship on the broad bosom of the ocean, our vessel not being in sight at the time we proposed to start.

We were, therefore, obliged to unload the boats, and hire a place for the lodgment of our men and part of our stores, the rest being deposited in a cave near the beach. This disappointment, which greatly annoyed my friends, was to me a source of congratulation, as it afforded me an opportunity of making inquiry respecting the inhabitants and productions of the island, which I was before prevented from doing, in consequence of the confusion caused by the hurried manner in which the barter was carried on. There being no public house of entertainment on the island, Mr. M'Kay invited the Captain, Doctor, and myself to take up our temporary quarters with him; while Captain De Saumarez was lodged in the house of a respectable native merchant.

The next morning we received intelligence that our ship had been seen off the village of Largens, where she lay becalmed, and about noon the Captain and Surgeon ascended a high hill to look out for her, but they looked in vain, and began to entertain fears that she would not return at all; in a few hours, however, their hopes were revived by news of a vessel seen to the westward coming towards the port with a fine breeze. We immediately hastened to re-embark our stores, and shoved off in the best possible spirits, hoping speedily to arrive on board, and proceed, under all sail, for Old England. About sunset, we were so close to the vessel, that we were in the act of

collecting our sticks and umbrellas, when Captain De Saumarez happening to look up and descry a mizen-top-sail, exclaimed to the discomfiture of the whole party, that it was not our ship! We were accordingly obliged to return, and such was the consternation and despair of my companions, that two of them gave me wagers of five dollars to one that the vessel would not return, an opinion which I stoutly combatted to the last. I could not induce myself to believe that the chief mate would commit so serious a derilection of duty as to return to England without his Captain, the Surgeon of the troops, the ship's boat, and a part of the crew, not to speak of the two passengers. To me it was a matter of indifference whether she returned or not, as my mind was more devoted to adventure than to the regular course of the homeward voyage. Notwithstanding I could not surrender my confidence in the mate, I, however, planned all necessary arrangements in case of the contingency. We intended, if cast on the alternative, to make our way first to Fayal and then to St. Michael's, to which places we could have easily procured a passage; proceeding from the latter to England, or at all events some part of the continent of Europe. On the following day various reports reached us about a boat that had been seen to make several attempts at landing on different parts of the coast, and we hastened down to the Custom House in the hope that it might have been sent from the Strathfieldsaye, but we were

again destined to be disappointed; as it proved to be a boat from the brig Falcon, which vessel left Bahia a few days after our departure from that port. There were two gentlemen in the boat (passengers) whom we happened to know, the Hon. Mr. Trench and Mr. Wilkins, late midshipmen of H.M.S. Samarang. They had passed the whole night at sea, but were picked up in the course of the morning by an American whaler, who brought them into Santa Cruz. Another report reached us in the course of the day, of a vessel that was approaching the island, and by the observations taken on shore, it was concluded that she must be the Strathfieldsaye. This cheering intelligence revived our hopes, and we again put to sea with our stores. In the course of an hour we reached the vessel, and had the satisfaction of finding our hopes confirmed. The reason assigned for the disappearance of the ship, was the extreme caution that was considered necessary in approaching the land on the evening of the day we left them, which was very squally; and the light winds and currents that prevailed throughout the two succeeding days.

The island of Flores, as well as all the Azores, declared for Don Pedro, in July, 1831, which was settled by a sheet of paper from Fayal, much to the joy of the inhabitants, who had suffered severely from the despotism of Don Miguel. The principal employments of the inhabitants are farming and fishing. They export wheat, maize, and cattle, to

Fayal. They have, besides horned cattle, a breed of asses, and small horses; although, strange to say, they have no mules on the island, which rather surprised me, as the Portuguese are known to make much use of these animals. Their occupation as fishermen, naturally renders them expert boatmen, and, with a little experience, they soon become good sailors. They not only fish in the immediate vicinity of the island, but go to a bank near Corvo, where they catch and cure great quantities of fish for their winter consumption, first salting them in their boats, and afterwards drying them on shore. Turkeys and fowls are abundant in Flores, but tame ducks are scarce. There were wild ducks in the ponds in the middle of the island; woodcocks were occasionally seen, but no snipes. Quails, grey canaries, and a few species of other small birds were abundant. Timber is scarce on the island, and the juniper cedar is the principal tree. Their fruits are oranges, lemons, peaches, figs, grapes, apples, pears, melons, wild strawberries, &c; and the vegetable productions are chiefly yams, potatoes, sweet potatoes, cauliflowers, onions, cucumbers, &c. Grapes are but slightly cultivated, merely for the table. A rough bridle road surrounds the island, intersected by numerous tracks to the various farms on the wayside. The usual modes of conveyance are on horseback, or by palanquins. There is an excellent supply of water from several rivulets that flow through the island.

The island of Corvo, which is seven leagues from Flores, contains nine hundred inhabitants, and the male population adopt the same occupations as the people of Flores. The soil, however, is not so fertile, and the greatest portion of the wheat raised, is exported to Fayal, where the landlords reside; but, as it is not sufficient to discharge their rents, they make up the deficiency with horned cattle. A very small portion is retained for home consumption, in the making of bread, and other articles, which are, however, used only on particular festivals. The farinaceous food, in ordinary use, is rye, and ground nuts, taken from the roots of a peculiar species of triangular rush, called funca, which is regularly cultivated for the sake of the nut, and the stem of which is from two to three feet in height. There are from one to six nuts attached by small fibres to the roots of each plant, varying in size from a pea to a grain of maize. They may be eaten fresh, and have, in that state, an agreeable sweet taste, but they are principally dried and bruised, into flour, when they are made into bread. There is no safe anchorage for large vessels at Corvo, nor is there a good beach for landing.

As I now approach the period of my return to England, I am anxious to satisfy a point of curiosity upon which I have often been questioned, and in which those who have accompanied me through this narrative, may possibly feel some

slight interest. I mean as to my system of managing money transactions; which, thrown as I was so much at the mercy of strangers, must appear to have involved considerable difficulty. I will, therefore, state the arrangements I made for the present voyage, which were similar to those I uniformly adopted in my former travels.

I took 100*l.* in five notes, of Herries and Farquhar's circulars with me, but not with a view of turning them into cash on the first occasion of wanting money, because it was my intention to draw private bills wherever I was sufficiently known to obtain credit, which I had the good fortune to find much more general than I had any right to expect. Indeed, my bills were readily taken in every place I visited, without a letter of credit, reference, or any other description of security. I took Herries and Farquhar's notes with me more as a precautionary measure, intending to use them as a reserve, in case I should be shipwrecked on the coast of any of the French, Spanish, Dutch, or Portuguese colonies, to serve as a temporary supply, where it was not likely I could be known, or where my private bills happened to be declined.

With respect to drawing bills, I may generally observe, that I never entertained any suspicion in such transactions, and have never been deceived. But I always acted with caution, applying only to respectable merchants or bankers; and such was my confidence in their integrity, that I

had no hesitation in suffering them to draw the bills that were to be made payable to themselves, frequently signing them when there was no third party present: nor can I recall a single instance in which any person attempted to take advantage of the confidence I reposed in them, either in the receipt, payment, or exchange of monies. In making bargains, or estimating the quality of articles by their prices, whenever I depended on my own judgment, I do not remember that I ever had any reason to be dissatisfied, nor do I think that in such matters I was more imposed upon, than I should have been if I had had my sight.

In the arrangement of my notes, gold, and silver, according to the respective value of each, I never found any difficulty; as a proof of which, I may observe that I generally settle my own bills, count out the money, and deliver it myself, merely referring the receipt to any one who happens to be with me, to ascertain whether the amount, date, &c. be correctly stated. Another proof of my circumspection is, that I never made such a mistake as giving a sovereign for a shilling; nor has any body ever been so kind as to give me gold for silver.

Notwithstanding I have travelled so much in foreign countries, and had so extensive an intercourse with strangers, I think I can safely say, that I have not been more deceived, or suffered greater losses in money transactions than any of my countrymen. Thank God! I have not found sufficient

cause to arm myself with suspicion, for, although there are despicable characters in every country, who would not hesitate to take advantage of others, I am happy to think that human nature is not so bad as she is generally pourtrayed, and that there is at least one redeeming quality, which is acknowledged to exist even in the worst characters—a reluctance to practise deceit or treachery on the afflicted, as they might be tempted to do on those who were capable of protecting themselves. On the whole I have much more reason to be grateful to mankind, than to complain of any uncharitableness; while, from the more educated part of the community, I have invariably experienced the most convincing evidence of the excellent qualities of the human heart, in constant and disinterested acts of kindness, hospitality, benevolence, and almost universal sympathy.

On the eleventh day after our departure from Flores, we found ourselves half-way up the British Channel.

The mixed feelings of anxiety and pleasure, hope and fear, with which the traveller who has been long absent from his native country, returns home at last, can hardly be understood by those who have never passed the shores of their birth-place, but who, nursed in the luxury of ease, have always lived amidst familiar scenes of unvarying and habitual repose. The excitement of the transition can scarcely be described, when the vessel floating

into the tranquil river, leaves the great expanse of waters behind, when, as she ploughs her way slowly through forests of masts, the roofs and spires of the city, volumes of smoke, and the buzz and din of traffic, indicate that she has entered into the Great Emporium of the West; and when, selecting her place of mooring, she drops anchor, perhaps close to the quay, and the motion to which the passengers have been accustomed for many months suddenly subsides, and is succeeded by a confused clamour of voices, by sounds burthened, probably from a distance, with rejoicings and welcomes, or, it may be, with mournful tidings—then the companionship of the vessel is dissolved, and each individual, drawn by his own sympathies, looks out in trembling expectation for the friends that ought to be there to greet him—some such thought passing in his mind as that which Lord Byron has so exquisitely expressed in these lines—

> 'Tis sweet to hear the honest watch-dog's bark
> Bay deep-mouthed welcome as we draw near home,
> 'Tis sweet to know there is an eye will mark
> Our coming, and look brighter when we come.

The hurry and bustle, the whirl of feet, and loud contention of voices, are but the thoughtless prelude to more anxious scenes, in which the traveller is afterwards to learn what has passed during his absence—what calamities have touched his kindred—what new sources of happiness have opened upon him and his—and who yet survives, of the wide

circle he left behind him, well and confident of life. The return home is, indeed, the moral of the journey. For my part I felt the homily severely, for during the period occupied by my last wanderings I had the misfortune to lose a father, a brother, and a sister, besides several other relatives, and many valuable friends. Death had been busy in the household, while I had been traversing distant lands, unconscious of the bereavements that were desolating the homestead!

My travels and my toils are now closed: and from this point of rest I may venture to look back upon the vicissitudes of my career, with, I trust, an acknowledging spirit, and a heart equally affected by gratitude and wonder. If my undertakings—for such they may without vanity be called—be productive of no other benefit than that of proving to the world how much may be done by a cheerful perseverance under a heavy affliction,—how great obstacles may be subdued by resolution,—how the void of sight may be peopled by an active mind, and the desert fertilized by industry,—how much hope exists even in the darkest page of life,—and how many resources against discontent and loneliness this beautiful and varied earth presents—I shall be content to think that my labours have not been altogether destitute of utility. I claim no literary honours, my avocations have not been in the bowers of the Muse—I have been a wanderer by sea and land, gathering knowledge by the way,

and if the world should pronounce that the materials I have collected be but "unconsidered trifles," I may still say with Montaigne, that they exhibit something that is my own, if it be nothing more than " the thread that binds them."

That I have experienced many difficulties of a kind which would have daunted other travellers, I cannot conceal even from myself, anxious as I am to tread "that side the sun's upon," throughout the whole of my diversified course. In the cultivation of those pursuits which were pressed upon me by the tasks I had prescribed to myself, my health suffered severely, and I was compelled to seek in my native air (Devonshire) the usual means of restoration. But I found that it was necessary to try a still more genial climate, and I went to France, alone, in 1819. I was then unacquainted with any of the continental languages. On this occasion I made, what used to be called, the Grand Tour, so celebrated in the comedies of the last century as the preparatory education of young diplomatists and men of fashion. At that time such a tour was a matter of serious importance and was entered upon with a feeling of gravity, that in these days appears somewhat ludicrous. The experimental citizen who brought away a snuff box from the lava of Vesuvius, was then considered a sort of miracle of a man—he is now a mere person of pleasure, who is looked upon as having visited the continent as a matter of course.

Passing through the south of France into Italy, I travelled over the greater part of the southern and northern states, crossing into Savoy by Mount Cennis, from whence I proceeded *via* Chamberry to Geneva, and through Switzerland to Basle, descending the Rhine to the sea, and from Amsterdam making a detour by the Hague, Rotterdam, and Antwerp to Brussels, and from thence by Ostend home. This tour greatly renovated my health, and gave me, by the experience and information which it enabled me to acquire, a fresh zest for visiting foreign countries, always keeping in view my final desire of circumnavigating the globe. In 1822 I went into Russia, traversing a great part of Siberia, (two thousand miles beyond Tobolsk) intending to embark at Kamschatka for the Russian establishment at Sitka, on the N. W. coast of America, hoping that I might take shipping there for the Sandwich Islands, China, or some part of South America, on my return to Europe. But Providence, under the agency of the Emperor Alexander, ordained it otherwise. My progress was suddenly checked, at the moment when I had the fairest prospect of accomplishing my wishes, by an imperial mandate, under which I was conveyed as a state prisoner to the confines of the empire and dismissed. I succeeded, however, in penetrating into those wild regions to which Russia consigns her criminals, and, perhaps, ought not to murmur that my projects were defeated by the suspicious

vigilance of the authorities, as I have since heen enabled to pursue my objects under happier auspices than I could then have calculated upon. My last adventure has been too recently brought before the public to render necessary a recapitulation of the scenes it embraces. Sierra Leone, Fernando Po, the rivers in the Bight of Biafra, the Brazils, Caffreland, Mauritius, Madagascar, the Cormoro Islands, Zanzibar, the Seychelles, Ceylon, Madras, Calcutta, China, Van Diemen's Land, and New South Wales, are the principal points touched upon; but numberless islands are clustered upon their track, some of which I have not failed to notice, and to which in these Volumes I have drawn attention in detail.

The obstacles against which I had to contend in these enterprises, were not confined merely to such as obstruct the blind. I went alone, without counsel, and without attendance. I was not sustained by advice or assistance from any body, and performed my journies, which were often arduous, and which, on the whole, embrace a vast surface, upon extremely limited pecuniary means. Had I suffered myself to look forward in the spirit of precaution, which the example of others might have justified, I never could have accomplished the objects I proposed. But I relied with enduring faith upon the Divine protection, and never surrendered my confidence in those sympathies which, amidst all the faults, and waywardness, and errors

of mankind, are still found to respond to the claims of persons circumstanced as I am: and I was not disappointed. In the remotest places, where civilization has sprung up but as a lonely flower in a barren soil—amongst crowds of strangers, speaking unknown tongues, governed by foreign usages, and alien to me in aspect and associations, I was received with kindness and consideration. Friends appeared where I could least have hoped for the consolations of friendship, the parched waste exhibited its oases, the wilderness its grateful and refreshing springs.

Of the impressions left upon my mind by the scenes through which I have passed, perhaps it may be expected that I should say something, on account of the curiosity that is naturally connected with a series of adventures distinguished from all others by at least the novel situation of the traveller. To the anomaly of a blind man attempting to explore distant countries,

"Sightless, seeing through the eyes of mind,"

my narrative owes its chief source of interest; but, as I have already explained in incidental passages, the nature of the pleasure I derived from the active employment of my faculties, and the means I adopted for obtaining the materials upon which I occupied my time, it is not necessary to demonstrate the advantages or practicability of such pursuits, as a relief from the loneliness which must have otherwise fallen, like a cloud, upon me. That it is possible for a blind man to enter into the

business of life with great utility to himself, and, perhaps, some benefit to others, and to diminish to a considerable degree not only the immediate pains of his position, but the distance at which it casts him from communion with the world, and its multiplying delights, is sufficiently evidenced in these volumes. The general effects of travelling are felt, perhaps, more sensibly by the blind than by any other class; if I may venture to predicate from my own experience. Undistracted by recollections of visual objects, I retain a vivid and distinct impression of the outlines and external character of every place I have visited. Unacquainted with local details to which, perhaps, much of the confusion that sometimes disturbs the memory may be referred, I have a clearer view of the great points, the formation, the resources, the population, the habits and manners of the different countries through which I passed. Their geographical situations are palpably fixed upon my mind, which has thus become, in some measure by necessity, a sort of map upon which the boundaries are traced with indelible distinctness, and the interior filled up with unerring precision. My associations of ideas are of course less complicated than if I perused the outspread volume with my eyes, and the whole work of my experience is mental: consequently whatever I retain, I retain permanently, and as far as it goes perspicuously. The different climates to which I have been exposed, the variations in the

modes of living, the changes in the customs of the people, and all the transitions following upon travels of many years, are as fresh to me as if they were but of recent occurrence: and I can recall with ease the most minute personal events, dates, and names, that lie scattered through the whole. Indeed, my recollection is so strong of every thing I have witnessed, that I believe I could orally recount, without reference to my diary, the entire of my wanderings from first to last. I mention these trifling peculiarities, as forming, in some sort, an illustrative addenda to this publication.

I cannot part from my readers, or this imperfect record of my investigations, without emotion. The kindness with which my work has been received, the generous allowances that have been made for the circumstances under which it was produced, and the consideration that has been personally extended to me from quarters to which I cannot turn without feelings of justifiable pride, will excuse the expression of sentiments that may transfer the attention of the reader from the book to its author. The reader will at least believe that his indulgence is not less prized than it is needed, and that the last peril of my adventures—his scrutiny—is met with a timidity which did not affect me in the presence of dangers of a different kind. If I shall have succeeded in propitiating his judgment, I shall feel that I have done well: and, reposing from my toils, review the past as an intellectual

ordeal, of which the difficulties are forgotten, and the pleasures only remembered. In the future, I can hardly promise to myself any indulgence in such speculations as have given occasion to these volumes, but I cannot contemplate the prospect of unemployed solitude, and may, perhaps, be led to seek other means of occupying it beneficially. Of that, however, it is premature to speak: it is enough that I have brought my venture to a safe conclusion, although I am unwilling to terminate my voyage of circumnavigation, as Sir Walter Raleigh closes his history of the world, with the mournful inscription of HIC JACET. My labours are over—but the spirit of the traveller knows no pause, and longs for yet untrodden ground. The aspiration, perhaps, is fruitless, but, like an unfulfilled prophecy, it may be permitted to accompany me to the end, if it were of no better use than that of sustaining those hopes, through which I have been enabled to extract from calamity so large a measure of enjoyment.

THE END.

C. NORMAN, PRINTER, MAIDEN LANE, COVENT GARDEN.

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building